BOOK

(untitled)

(chapter 4 only: *God and Faith*)

Paweł Grabowski

version 1.0 public 1-9-2025 EN

God Is Causality

Proof:

#1 Name of God

> The Tetragrammaton, or Tetragram, is the four-letter Hebrew word יהוה (transliterated as YHWH), the name of the national god of Israel. (...) While there is no consensus about the structure and etymology of the name, the form Yahweh is now accepted almost universally.

Wikipedia, Tetragrammaton (2022)

„Jehovah" is a phonetic notation of a hebrew tetragram יהוה which means: „*He causes to become*". Causality is what makes something to happen. Something can't come from nothing, for this reason if matter or energy or anything else always existed, Causality transformed it into what it is now.

> You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or on the earth below or in the waters under the earth. You must not bow down to them nor be led to serve them (...)

Deuteronomy 5:8, 9

Because humans began to portray God as a man-shaped being, it is customary to say that this is „He" – which would imply that it is a person; has been personified. Meanwhile God existed before man, before any gender and before any earthy being. The God of the Bible acts *like* causality, Jesus showed that we are to address God *as a* father because he is higher than us and because we are subject to him, not because he is a person.

What to name something should be discussed at the very end, after getting to know the features of it, so let's see what attributes and properties has God.

#2 Time

Causality existed always, with no beginning and end.

> Before the mountains were born or you brought forth the earth and the productive land, from everlasting to everlasting, you are God.

Psalms 90:2

> Now to the King of eternity, incorruptible, invisible, the only God, be honor and glory forever and ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 1:17

> „I am the Alpha and the Omega", says Jehovah God, „the One who is and who was and who is coming, the Almighty."

Revelation 1:8

Time is the distance between events.
When nothing happens, time does not exists.

> But Moses said to the true God: „Suppose I go to the Israelites and say to them, ‚The God of your forefathers has sent me to you', and they say to me, ‚What is his name?' What should I say to them?" So God say to Moses: „I Will Become What I Choose to Become". And he added: „This is what you are to say to the Israelites, ‚I Will Become has sent me to you' ".

Exodus 3:13, 14 „I AM THAT I AM" – KJV „I AM WHO I AM" – NIV

- the future of the Causality will will turn out to be what it will be for those who cannot predict it. Causality shaped the present and had power over the past.

Moses saw God from behind[1]. To „see God from behind" means to see the past, to see what was, to see the causes that formed the present state of affairs. It was one of the reasons why he could have written the book of Genesis. Interestingly, he did not see the very face of God – in front – that is, what is yet to come, the future. No one can see the effects of actions they don't understand.
The only one who saw God "in front" is Jesus:

> A revelation by Jesus Christ, which God gave him, to show his slaves the things that must shortly take place (...)

Revelation 1:1; see also Revelation 5:1-7

When you see the Causality in front, the future, there is nothing you can do, or take any action that would change this future, you are as if dead[2]; if you do something that would change the future you see, then you would lose that future, and your effort to learn about it would be wasted.

If there is a personal God, how did the people from earlier times (before the Bible was written) communicated with him?

Adam spoke to God when he walked in Eden (Genesis 3:8);
Enoch walked with God (Genesis 5:22);
Job saw God (Job 42:5);
Moses spoke to God "face to face" (Exodus 33:11);
Those who are "pure in heart" see God (Matthew 5:8).

In earlier times, prophets who spoke with God were called "Seers" because they saw what was to come from Causality.

> In former times in Israel, this was what a man would say when going to seek God: „Come, and let us go to the seer". For the prophet of today used to be called a seer in former times.

1 Samuel 9:9

1 Exodus 33:18-23 After that I will take my hand away, and you will see my back. But my face may not be seen.
2 Exodus 33:20 (...) You cannot see my face, for no man can see me and live.

#3 Place

God is in one place, in Heaven, but also „he is not far off from each one of us[3]".
The place where causality resides is Heaven. Not literal, of course, the Bible has always tried explain the unknown with the known.

The material heaven is above man. On its vault there are the sun, moon and stars – all celestial bodies that give light thanks to which a man knows where to go so as not to stumble over anything.

The immaterial Heaven is a place "high up" for those underneath to look up with their eyes (of their minds) to see the rulers[4]: Causality and other heavenly bodies that give light of wisdom, thanks to which those who see them see where to go and what to do, and lest they stumble in ignorance of things they do not see – things they do not know. Just as Heaven is invisible to the physical eye, the ideas, laws and teachings that govern others are also invisible to the physical eye.

Heaven is where the rulers reside. Causality is highest in Heaven because Causality rules everything.

> (...) Where is Jehovah, the God of Eliah? (...)
>
> 2 Kings 2:14

> If only I knew where to find God! I would go to his place of dwelling.
>
> Job 23:3

> But if I go east, he is not there; And I return and I cannot find him.
> When he is working on the left, I cannot look upon him; Then he turns to the right, but I still do not see him.
>
> Job 23:8, 9

> Where can I escape from your spirit, and where can I run away from your face?
> If I were to ascend to heaven, you would be there, and if I were to make my bed in the Grave, look! you would be there.
> If I would fly away with the wings of the dawn to reside by the most remote sea, even there your hand would lead me and your right hand would take hold of me.
>
> Psalms 139:7-10

Heaven is visible to everyone. When you look up, you see it immediately – just like you look up at a ruler to listen to what he has to say. This comparison of the literal heaven with the abode of God is perfect.

> Rather, store up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust consumes, and where thieves do not break in and steal.
> For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.
>
> Matthew 6:20, 21

3 Acts 17:27
4 Whether these rulers are good or bad, see Revelation 12:7-9

There is a popular view that a personal God does not dwell in a work that He created, just like the one who created the computer does not reside in it, but has power over it. Similarly, Causality is not time, space, or matter, but it creates them and has power over them.

> (...) Jehovah was passing by, and a great and strong wind was splitting mountains and breaking crags before Jehovah, but Jehovah was not in the wind. After the wind, there was an earthquake, but Jehovah was not in the earthquake. After the earthquake, there was fire, but Jehovah was not in the fire. After the fire, there was a calm, low voice.

1 Kings 19:11,12

#4 The language of God

> There is no speech, and there are no words;
> Their voice are not heard.
> But into all the earth their sound has gone out,
> And to the ends of the inhabited earth their message. (...)

Psalms 19:3-4

The language of God is none of the languages that humans communicate. Writing and speech are not the only means of communication.

> and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free

John 8:32

> What is truth?

John 18:38

> (...) your word is truth.

John 17:17

The Word of Causality is the truth. If it tells you that something will happen someday and if it really happens in the future, then this „word" was from God, because the course of things leading up to this event was supervised by Causality.

At the very beginning of the Bible, there is a description of the creation of the Earth. On each day of the creation, God says what he creates:

> Then God said: „Let the waters under the heavens be collected together into one place, and let the dry land appear". And it was so.

Genesis 1:9

Or:

> Then God said: „Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness, and let them have in subjection the fish of the sea and the flying creatures of the heavens and the domestic animals and all the earth and every creeping animal that is moving on the earth".

Genesis 1:26

Truth *is* the word of God. His word is truth – reality.

God tells you the truth, just like the sky tells you it's blue, or the apple tells you it's sweet, or the proboscis tells you it's loud. "Intelligence" that does not speak in words but in deeds – that's why some people cannot or do not want to listen to God, or even deny the truth. Will a deaf person know that the trumpet tells him it is loud? Will the sky tell the blind if its blue? Will a man without a tongue understand the speech of a sweet apple? Therefore, not everyone is able to understand the word of God. That's why not everyone can understand word of God – just like not everyone can perceive objective reality in 100%.

Only the one who accepts the truth is worthy of talking to God who speaks only the truth – only the one who recognizes this reality is worthy of seeing reality as it is.

If you don't want to admit something to yourself then you are running away from the truth, from God's word and from what He says to you – for a conversation to take place, an exchange of informations is necessary on both sides, only then the conversation will be effective.

Prayer is a conversation with God. When you ask a question, it's a God who answers:

Why are there wars?
Why are there diseases, food shortages, natural disasters?
Why are people dying?
Then he leads you back in the chain of causality and shows you the *cause* of all these things
How can we make God's Kingdom come?
How to make the Earth have an abundance of food?
How to make peace reign and people live forever?
- then he shows you the front of the chain of causality – the future – how to achieve the mentioned above effects.
When there is a problem, you are asking only him because he is the only one who gives the answer. You ask, „Why?" – Causality gives the answer.

When you ask Causality: "Why (is this happening?) (should I do this?)" you are talking to God, you are praying.

Because God's word is truth, Causality frees from lies when you talk to it.

What is made in God's image, can talk to God.

What God says to man is personal, individual and separate from the ears of others[5].

To communicate, both must understand other language. You cannot communicate with someone – *directly* – unless you are using an intelligible means of communication. You cannot interact with someone if you are using the wrong means of interaction. Will the apple tell you so you can hear with your ears that it is red when you ask with your speech? It will reply to you when you use your eyes, not your ears or your speech.

Whatever you ask for in conversation with Causality, if you receive from it the faith that you will get it, it will be yours.

> (...) This is why I tell you, all the things you pray and ask for, have faith that you have received them, and you will have them.
>
> Mark 11:23, 24

5 Genesis 3:1 (...) So it [serpent] say to the woman: "Did God really say that you must not eat from every tree of the garden?" (see also Matthew 6:18)

Faith – is God's response to your prayer, because your request is a cause and faith is an effect received from Causality.

You can pray in any body position, standing, kneeling or hanging with nailed hands.

If you speak the language of untruth (consciously or not), you cannot speak with God.

The person who rejects the truth rejects the word of God.

#5 God is the source of wisdom

> And he said to man:
> *‚Look! The fear of Jehovah – that is wisdom,*
> *And to turn away from bad is understanding'*

Job 28:28, see also Proverbs 16:6 B: „by fearing Jehovah one turns away from bad"

You will be afraid of the actions you take when Causality takes them to a bad, undesirable result. Sometimes you will see all the consequences of the actions you take, sometimes you won't. This is *wisdom* – fear of the Causality. Knowing Causality is wisdom.

When you understand, seeing that the action you are about to take, leads to an bad, undesirable goal, and you abandon this action, you understand that you did the right thing by not doing what you wanted. This is *understanding* – turning away from the action that you wanted to do because it would lead to a bad outcome.

> The fear of Jehovah is the beginning of knowledge.
> Only fools despise wisdom and discipline.

Proverbs 1:7 and 9:10, see also Psalms 111:10 and Proverbs 28:5

The fear of the Causality is the beginning of knowledge.

Though you cannot see with your physical eyes what is in the dark, the light from Causality makes you know what is there.

Knowledge is the reflection in our heads of information about what is outside us (and inside us – for those who can see their insides). Knowledge is false if the information in our mind does not reflect reality. If the word of God is truth and if there is no false wisdom in you, then you are a child of God because the word of God, the truth, is in you.

> Also, night will be no more, and they have no need of lamplight or sunlight, for Jehovah God will shed light upon them (...)

Revelation 22:5, see also Proverbs 4:18-19 and Ecclesiastes 2:13,14

> And God said: "Let there be light". Then there was light.

Genesis 1:3

Stupidity is not listening to Causality.

#6 God is the source of life

> With you is the source of life;
> By your light we can see light.

Psalms 36:9

> And I know his commandment means everlasting life. So wtahever I speak, I speak just as the Father has told me.

John 12:50

> And Jehovah God went on to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living person.

Genesis 2:7 „living soul" – KJV „living being" – NIV

What brought man to life was simply air, oxygen, which began to keep the body's breathing process going. Air to breathe, nothing more, because the body "is just dust[6]". If man consists of matter, then he has the qualities and properties of matter.

What is subject to Causality – exists; what is not subject to Causality does not exist, does not live and doesn't not affect anything else. This applies to things that are, as well as those that have just been created and those that are created for a short time (such as an imaginary image in the head). What is not subject to God can be said to be in the abyss, in a place where can't do anything and cannot affect anything. Things that are not subject to Causality do not exist (although they did exist – all the ancient gods of Egypt, Aztec gods, the gods of Babylon, Greece or Rome and their systems and laws are in the abyss with no way out and influencing the human world – although they once attracted nations).

God Himself has eternal life.

> For just as the Father has life in himself, so he has granted also to the Son to have life in himself.

John 5:26

One event is followed by another, these in turn have an impact on the next, which is born by another one, and so on to infinity[7]. This is Causality. Causality cannot stop. Causality cannot „die". Eternal life is an endless number of events taking place one after another.

The Old Testament characters had doubts as to whether a person could live forever.

> If a man dies, can he live again? (...)

Job 14:14

> For the years to come are few, and I will go away on the path of no return.

Job 16:22

> Where, then, is my hope? Who can see hope for me? It will go down to the barred gates of the Grave, when we all descend together into dust.

Job 17:15, 16

> The ransom price for their life is so precious, that it is always beyond their reach

Psalms 49:8

6 Genesis 3:19 (...) For dust you are and to dust you will return.
7 Ecclesiastes 1:6-7; Job 28:25:26

> (...) you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.

Genesis 3:19

If this is true, the resurrected Jesus could not have been just dust or flesh, he was, and is, something more.

> It is the spirit that is life-giving; the flesh is of no use at all.
> The sayings that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life.

John 6:63

Jesus *proved* that man can live forever.
He has restored what had been taken from us: the belief that we can live forever – the belief in things previously thought impossible. Many people are grateful to him when they say that he „gave his life for them". But after Jesus' death, people do not live forever. So what does it mean that he gave his life for them? This means that he showed that man can live forever, that he can overcome death. If a man can live forever, it is only in good conditions, therefore the Earth must be made a place where one would like to live.

> Jesus said to her: „Your brother will rise".
> Martha said to him: „I know he will rise in the resurrection in the last day".
> Jesus said to her: „I am the resurrection and the life. The one who exercises faith in me, even though he dies, will come to life and everyone who is living and exercises faith in me will never die at all. Do you believe this?"

John 11:23-26

Not all people would like to live forever in this system, so it is necessary to improve the world and make it better and better, so that people would like to live *in it*. There is no other material place where material man can live.

If in God / Jehovah / Causality there is eternal life[8], then cannot be allowed the will of people to be more important than the will of God, for the word of people to prevail over the word of God, which is truth.

#7 God is the source of strength

People do something because there is a reason for it – starting from the simplest physiological activities, through play and learning, to the most seemingly chaotic things. This cause provides the strength by which you act.

Lots of people get thrown into some activities by others and do it without asking themselves: „Why?". This is the case with children who are sent to school, acquiring knowledge they will never use again and performing various tasks that will never be useful to them again – especially since nowadays all knowledge is at hand, and calculations are within the reach of a calculator – to perform activities smarter, not harder, not to mention the gargantuan waste of time. Knowledge that can be gained in school, could be achieved without it.

The truth provides strength. If you stay in the lie, you will be powerless. Truth is the word of God. Those who have no strength do not know the truth. This is why it often happened that one man was stronger than the united hundreds and thousands.

8 Acts 17:25 (...) he himself gives to all people life and breath and all things.

So what's it for? Why am I doing this? „Why" gives meaning to the activities performed – without it, these actions are meaningless. „Why" is a source of power to do things. without which you are powerless. So when you take away someone's cause, when you take away someone's reason to act, their goal, their purpose, their „why" – you take away their power.

This „Why" is God's active force.

Only human can have the holy spirit – the active force of God, because only he can ask the question „Why is it like this" and then „How can I fix it?", and then this man does something about it, this man is active, this man lives. Therefore it is impossible for an animal to sin against the holy spirit, but a human being can.

When you learn something from Causality, you have „why". You cannot gain faith from anyone but Causality, because it always tells the truth – Adam and Eve did not question whether what God is saying to them is true or not.

You cannot change the truth once its made, therefore it is „the truth is on your side" and not „you have the truth". Likewise, instead of saying, „I want to believe", you should say, „I want to find faith", because you cannot believe just by yourself[9] – otherwise your faith would be false. Faith has to be given to you, you cannot take it by yourself. There must be a cause for your faith – when the cause is real then the result is real and bears real fruit. When you know and when you have „Why", you have power. Without the „Why", the cause is not with you to make your action to make sense. Then the power will be on your side, not you will have it.

> For this reason I say to you, every sort of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the spirit will not be forgiven. For example, whoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it will be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the holy spirit, it will not be forgiven him, no, not in this system of things nor in that to come.

Matthew 12:31,32

To sin against the holy spirit is to do contrary to what God's active force commands you to do, because once you do, Causality will lead you along the path you have chosen. This is what the first humans did. That's why Jesus repeated so often not to fall into temptation[10].

9 Mark 9:24 (...) Help me out where I need faith!
Luke 17:5 (...) Give us more faith!
Matthew 17:20 (...) Because of your little faith (...)

10 Luke 22:40, 46 (...) Carry on prayer so that you do not enter into temptation

#8 Blessings and curses

“‘You must not make worthless gods for yourselves, and you must not set up a carved image or a sacred pillar for yourselves, and you must not put a stone figure in your land in order to bow down toward it, for I am Jehovah your God. You should keep my sabbaths and show reverence for my sanctuary. I am Jehovah. If you continue walking in my statutes and keeping my commandments and you carry them out, I will give you showers of rain at their proper time, and the land will yield its produce, and the trees of the field will give their fruit. Your threshing season will extend until your grape harvest, and the grape harvest will extend until the sowing season and you will eat your bread to satisfaction and dwell in security in your land. I will put peace in the land, and you will lie down with no one making you afraid and I will rid the land of vicious wild animals, and a sword of war will not pass through your land. You will certainly pursue your enemies, and they will fall before you by the sword. Five of you will pursue 100, and 100 of you will pursue 10,000, and your enemies will fall before you by the sword, I will direct my favor to you and make you fruitful and multiply you, and I will keep my covenant with you. While you are still eating the old produce of the preceding year, you will need to clear out the old to make way for the new. And I will place my tabernacle in your midst, and I will not reject you. I will walk among you and be your God, and you for your part will be my people. I am Jehovah your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt to be their slaves no longer, and I broke the bars of your yoke and made you walk with heads held high.

However, if you will not listen to me or keep all these commandments, and if you reject my statutes, and if you abhor my judicial decisions so that you do not keep all my commandments, and you violate my covenant, I, for my part, will do the following to you: I will punish you with distress, with tuberculosis and burning fever, making your eyes fail and your life waste away. You will sow your seed simply for nothing, for your enemies will eat it. I will set my face against you, and you will be defeated by your enemies and those who hate you will tread on you, and you will flee when no one is pursuing you. If even this does not make you listen to me, I will have to chastise you seven times as much for your sins. I will break your stubborn pride and make your heavens like iron and your earth like copper. You will exhaust your strength for nothing, as your land will not yield its produce, and the trees of the land will not produce fruit. But if you keep walking in opposition to me and refuse to listen to me, I will then have to strike you seven times as much, according to your sins. I will send the wild animals of the field among you, and they will bereave you of children and annihilate your domestic animals and reduce your numbers, and your roads will be deserted. If in spite of these things you do not accept my correction and you insist on walking in opposition to me, then I too will walk in opposition to you, and I myself will strike you seven times for your sins. I will bring an avenging sword upon you for breaking the covenant. If you gather yourselves into your cities, I will send disease into your midst, and you will be given into the hand of an enemy. When I destroy your supply of bread, ten women will be able to bake your bread in only one oven and then ration your bread by weight and you will eat but you will not be satisfied. If in spite of this you will not listen to me and you insist on walking in opposition to me, I will intensify my opposition to you, and I myself will have to chastise you seven times for your sins. So you will have to eat the flesh of your sons, and you will eat the flesh of your daughters. I will annihilate your sacred high places and cut down your incense stands and pile your carcasses on the carcasses of your disgusting idols, and I will turn away from you in disgust. I will give your cities to the sword and make your sanctuaries desolate, and I will not smell the pleasing aromas of your sacrifices. I myself will make the land desolate, and your enemies who are dwelling in it will stare in amazement over it. And I will scatter you among the nations, and I will unsheathe a sword after you and your land will be made desolate, and your cities will be devastated. At that time the land will pay off its sabbaths all the days it lies desolate, while you are in the land of your enemies. At that time the land will rest, as it must repay its sabbaths. All the days it lies desolate it will rest, because it did not rest during your sabbaths when you were dwelling on it. As for those who survive, I will fill their hearts with despair in the lands of their enemies and the sound of a blowing leaf will cause them to flee, and they will flee like someone running from the sword and fall without anyone pursuing them. They will stumble over one another like those running from a sword, though no one is pursuing them. You will not be able to resist your enemies. You will perish among the nations, and the land of your enemies will consume you. Those of you who remain will be left to rot in the lands of your enemies because of your error. Yes, they will rot away because of the errors of their fathers. Then they will confess their own error and the error and unfaithfulness of their fathers and admit that they behaved unfaithfully by walking in opposition to me. Then I also walked in opposition to them by bringing them into the land of their enemies. Perhaps then their uncircumcised *heart will be humbled*, and then they will pay off their error. And I will remember my covenant with Jacob, and my covenant with Isaac, and I will remember my covenant with Abraham, and I will remember the

land. While the land was abandoned by them, it was paying off its sabbaths and lying desolate without them, and they were paying for their error, because they rejected my judicial decisions and they abhorred my statutes. But despite all of this, while they are in the land of their enemies, I will never completely reject them nor cast them away to the point of exterminating them, which would violate my covenant with them, for I am Jehovah their God. For their sakes I will remember the covenant with their ancestors whom I brought out of the land of Egypt under the eyes of the nations, in order to prove myself their God. I am Jehovah.'"

Leviticus 26:1-45

"And if you will without fail listen to the voice of Jehovah your God by being careful to do all his commandments that I am commanding you today, Jehovah your God will certainly put you high above all other nations of the earth. All these blessings will come upon you and overtake you, because you keep listening to the voice of Jehovah your God: Blessed you will be in the city, and blessed you will be in the field. Blessed will be your children and the fruit of your ground and the offspring of your livestock, your young cattle and sheep. Blessed will be your basket and your kneading bowl. Blessed you will be when you come in, and blessed you will be when you go out. Jehovah will cause your enemies who rise up against you to be defeated before you. They will attack you from one direction, but they will flee from you in seven different directions. Jehovah will decree for you a blessing on your storehouses and every undertaking of yours, and he will certainly bless you in the land that Jehovah your God is giving you. Jehovah will establish you as a holy people to himself, just as he swore to you, because you continue to keep the commandments of Jehovah your God and walk in his ways. All the peoples of the earth will have to see that Jehovah's name has been called upon you, and they will be afraid of you. Jehovah will make you overflow with many children and much livestock and fruitful ground in the land that Jehovah swore to your forefathers to give you. Jehovah will open up to you his good storehouse, the heavens, to give your land rain in its season and to bless all that you do. You will lend to many nations, while you yourself will not need to borrow. Jehovah will make you the head, and not the tail and you will be on top, and not on the bottom, if you keep obeying the commandments of Jehovah your God that I am commanding you today to observe and to do. You must not deviate from all the words that I am commanding you today, to the right or to the left, to walk after other gods to serve them.

But if you will not listen to the voice of Jehovah your God by taking care to do all his commandments and his statutes that I am commanding you today, all these curses will come upon you and overtake you: Cursed you will be in the city, and cursed you will be in the field. Cursed will be your basket and your kneading bowl. Cursed will be your children and the fruit of your ground and your young cattle and sheep. Cursed you will be when you come in, and cursed you will be when you go out. Jehovah will send upon you the curse, confusion and punishment in every undertaking of yours until you have been annihilated and have quickly perished, because of your bad practices and your forsaking me. Jehovah will cause the disease to cling to you until he has exterminated you from the land you are going to take possession of. Jehovah will strike you with tuberculosis, burning fever, inflammation, feverish heat, the sword, scorching blight, and mildew and they will pursue you until you have perished. The skies over your head will be copper, and the earth beneath you, iron. Jehovah will make the rain of your land powder and dust that will come down on you from the heavens until you have been annihilated. Jehovah will cause you to be defeated before your enemies. You will attack them from one direction, but you will flee from them in seven different directions and you will become an object of horror to all the earth's kingdoms. And your carcasses will become food for every bird of the sky and animal of the ground, with no one to frighten them away. Jehovah will strike you with the boils of Egypt, piles, eczema, and skin lesions, from which you cannot be healed. Jehovah will strike you with madness and blindness and confusion. You will grope about at midday, just as a blind man gropes about in darkness, and you will not succeed in anything you do and you will be constantly defrauded and robbed, with no one to save you. You will become engaged to a woman, but another man will rape her. You will build a house, but you will not live in it. You will plant a vineyard, but you will not begin to use it. Your bull will be slaughtered before your eyes, but you will not eat any of it. Your donkey will be stolen right in front of you, but it will not return to you. Your sheep will be given to your enemies, but you will have no savior. Your sons and your daughters will be given to another people while you look on, and you will always long for them, but your hands will be powerless. The fruitage of your ground and all that you produce will be eaten by a people whom you have not known, and you will always be defrauded and crushed. You will be driven mad by what your eyes see. Jehovah will strike you with painful and incurable boils on your knees and legs, from the sole of your foot to the crown of your head. Jehovah will drive you and the king whom you set up over yourself to a nation that you and your forefathers have not known, and

there you will serve other gods, gods of wood and of stone. And you will become an object of horror and of scorn, and a cause for ridicule among all the peoples to whom Jehovah drives you. You will take much seed out into the field, but you will gather little, because the locust will devour it. Vineyards you will plant and cultivate, but you will drink no wine and gather nothing, because the worm will consume it. You will have olive trees in all your territory, but you will rub no oil on yourself, because your olives will drop off. Sons and daughters you will bear, but they will not remain yours, because they will go off into captivity. Swarms of insects will overwhelm all your trees and the fruitage of your ground. The foreign resident who is in your midst will keep ascending higher and higher over you, while you yourself will keep descending lower and lower. He will lend to you, but you will not lend to him. He will become the head, while you yourself will become the tail. All these curses*g* will certainly come upon you and pursue you and overtake you until you have been annihilated, because you did not listen to the voice of Jehovah your God by keeping his commandments and his statutes that he commanded you. And they will continue on you and your offspring as a permanent sign and portent, because you did not serve Jehovah your God with rejoicing and joy of heart when you had such an abundance of everything. Jehovah will send your enemies against you, and you will serve them while you are hungry and thirsty and poorly clothed and lacking everything. He will put an iron yoke on your neck until he has annihilated you. Jehovah will raise up against you a distant nation, from the end of the earth; it will pounce like an eagle, a nation whose language you will not understand, a nation fierce in appearance that will show no regard to the old or favor to the young. They will eat the offspring of your livestock and the fruitage of your ground until you have been annihilated. They will not leave any grain, new wine or oil, young cattle or sheep for you until they have destroyed you. They will besiege you, shutting you up inside all your cities throughout your land until your high and fortified walls that you are trusting in fall down. Yes, they will certainly besiege you within all your cities throughout your land that Jehovah your God has given you. Then you will have to eat your own children, the flesh of your sons and your daughters whom Jehovah your God has given you, because of the severity of the siege and the distress your enemy inflicts on you. Even the most delicate and sensitive man among you will have no pity on his brother or his cherished wife or his sons who remain, and he will not share with them any of the flesh of his sons that he will eat, because he has nothing else on account of the severity of the siege and the distress your enemy inflicts on your cities. And the delicate and sensitive woman among you who would not even think of putting the sole of her foot on the ground because she is so delicate, will show no pity to her cherished husband or her son or her daughter, even toward the afterbirth that comes from between her legs and toward the sons she bears, for she will secretly eat them because of the severity of the siege and the distress your enemy inflicts on your cities. If you will not carefully observe all the words of this Law that are written in this book and you do not fear this glorious and awe-inspiring name, that of Jehovah your God, Jehovah will inflict very severe plagues on you and your offspring, great and enduring plagues, and grievous and enduring sicknesses. He will bring back upon you all the diseases of Egypt that you used to fear, and they will certainly cling to you. Moreover, Jehovah will even bring upon you every sickness or plague not written in the book of this Law until you have been annihilated. Although you have become as numerous as the stars of the heavens, very few of your number will be left, because you did not listen to the voice of Jehovah your God. And just as Jehovah once delighted to make you prosper and to multiply you, so Jehovah will delight to destroy you and to annihilate you; and you will be torn from the land you are about to possess. Jehovah will scatter you among all the nations, from the one end of the earth to the other end of the earth, and there you will have to serve gods of wood and of stone, which you and your forefathers have not known. You will have no peace among those nations nor a place of rest for the sole of your foot. Rather, Jehovah will give you there an anxious heart and failing eyes and a feeling of despair. Your life will be in great peril, and you will feel dread night and day; and you will be uncertain of your survival. In the morning you will say, ‘If only it were evening!’ and in the evening you will say, ‘If only it were morning!’ because of the dread you will feel in your heart and because of what your eyes will see. And Jehovah will certainly bring you back to Egypt by ship, by the way that I told you, ‘You will never see it again,’ and there you will have to sell yourselves to your enemies as male and female slaves, but there will be no buyer.”

Deuteronomy 28

A blessing is the result of your actions, just like a curse.
Your good deeds are the cause, blessing is their effect.
Your bad deed is the cause, the result is a curse.
You get the result of your action from Causality.

> (...) I will treat them according to their ways, and I will judge them as they have judged. And they will have to know that I am Jehovah.

Ezekiel 7:27

> (...) Jehovah was passing before him and declaring: “Jehovah, Jehovah, a God merciful and compassionate, slow to anger and abundant in loyal love and truth, showing loyal love to thousands, pardoning error and transgression and sin, but he will by no means leave the guilty unpunished, bringing punishment for the error of fathers upon sons and upon grandsons, upon the third generation and upon the fourth generation.”

Exodus 34:6,7

You must pay for your actions with consequences. Your deeds will be forgiven after receiving all the consequences for your actions, so that there will be no more effects from the deeds you caused[11].

Few people ask themselves: What is God's power and might?
It consists in this: if you do even the smallest action, God will judge you for it, his judgment is characterized by this: for your action you will receive a consequence from him. No man can escape from him.

#9 Prophecies and predictions

The universe is totally deterministic because it is ruled by Causality. Thus, it is possible to predict the future if your will does not interfere with it. With the help of Causality, from the beginning, it is possible to see what the end will be.

> From the beginning I foretell the outcome, and from long ago the things that have not yet been done. I say, ‚My decision will stand, and I will do whatever I please’.

Isaiah 46:10

> (...) Jehovah, the God who inspired the prophets (...)

Revelation 22:6

You can predict the result of an equation when you are not a variable in it. Once you are outside the balance of the giant equation, you can predict and calculate it. You can predict the future of an area and everything and everyone that is in it when you are outside of that area, because then you are not interfering with that area, you are not living in that area and you are not part of that area, you are *separate* from it. If your will is part of the equation, you cannot predict the outcome of that equation. Only one who has no will of his own and is guided by Causality can accurately predict the future. The price paid by the ability to see future events in a given area is to leave that area, not interfere with it and no longer associate any of your own desires with it.

When you are outside an area and you do not interfere with it, and when you have already predicted the future of that area and yet you interfere with it, you change the future you predicted for that area because you are adding a new factor to that area – yourself and your actions and your life and your desires for this area.

11 See Matthew 24:21

Prophecy is information announcing an upcoming event, so the cause of this event, this effect, must exist before the prophecy. A prophecy can exist because there is a reason for its fulfillment before it. There cannot be a prophecy first and then a reason for its fulfillment. Can an unfounded prophecy itself produce a result that fulfills that prophecy? If an event is to come (and is announced) then its (prime-) cause must exist now. Prophecy in itself has no causative power – the cause does.

Prophecy is always based on what has already happened. Prophecy is not made based on what will happen next. It happens that predictions are made based on information (that we have now) about what was and on information (that we have now) about what will be.

> Then Jonah entered the city, and walking a day's journey, he was proclaiming:
> "In just 40 days more, Nineveh will be overthrown."
>
> When the true God saw what they did, how they had turned back from their evil ways, he reconsidered the calamity that he said he would bring on them, and he did not bring it.
>
> But this was highly displeasing to Jonah, and he became hot with anger. So he prayed to Jehovah: "Ah, now, Jehovah, was this not my concern when I was in my own land? That is why I tried to flee to Tarshish in the first place; for I knew that you are compassionate and merciful God, slow to anger and abundant in loyal love, one who feels grieved over calamity."

Jonah 3:4, 10; 4:1-2

Everything is subject to Causality, so everything can be predicted. Victory is decided before the war begins; The prophecy of defeat is made before the battle begins.

The Scriptures speak of „the Bowls of God's Wrath". John's Revelation first mentions them in chapter 15:

> And I saw in heaven another sign, great and wonderful, seven angels with seven plagues. These are the last ones, because by means of them the anger of God is brought to a finish.

Revelation 15:1

Chapter 16 talks about the pouring of bowls and the misfortunes they cause.
It is not the will of a personal God to send such plagues. The bowls are the consequences of humanity's actions. The 7 trumpets mentioned in chapters 8-11 are a warning against these coming bowls of wrath – a warning not in the form of literal trumpet calls, but in the form of events (loud like trumpet calls) that herald more terrible events (symbolizing the bowls of wrath).

> For we are consumed by your anger and terrified by your rage.
> You place our errors in front of you;
> Our secrets are exposed by the light of your face.
> Our days ebb away because of your fury;
> And our years come to an end like a whisper.

Psalms 90:7-9 see also Isaiah 26:20-21

The Wrath of Causality is the pouring out on people of the consequences of their evil deeds.

When will God stop being angry? When you do not make Causality angry with you.

The same regarding the account of the exile from Paradise: the Bible does not describe God's will here. God does not say: "I am driving you out of paradise, it is my will" or: "Adam, you will die because I want to."

Many people fear punishment from God as His wrath for their sins. There is no such thing as the punishment of a personal god sent down to humans. There is no punishment – only consequence. You have to fear consequences, not punishment – not punishment resulting from someone else's will. God did not punish Adam and Eve, but only said what would be the consequences of their actions when they committed them[12].

Judgment is made when the prophecy is spoken. Judgment is fulfilled when prophecy is fulfilled.

Causality predicts and warns[13].

Everyone is responsible for his deed, for his faults and sin. The Devil is responsible for his sin:

> And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your offspring and her offspring. He will crush your head, and you will strike him in the heel.

Genesis 3:15

and Adam is responsible for his sin and suffered its consequences:

> (...) cursed is the ground *in your account*. In pain you will eat its produce all the days of your life. It will grow thorns and thistles for you, and you must eat vegetation of the field. In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken. For dust you are and to dust you will return.

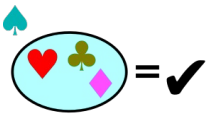
Genesis 3:17-19

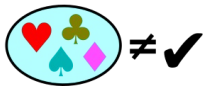
As long as there are proven prophecies that nothing or no one will change, there will be determinism[14].

> (...) for these things must take place, but the end is not yet.

Matthew 24:6

The purpose of the DNA code, which is already in the embryo, is to build an eye, a leg, a heart. When the code is executed then destiny is fulfilled. The purpose of the cause (code) is to create the effect (body, organs). Destiny is therefore determined because there is a cause that strives to fulfill it. A network of causes makes an effect that can be predicted, so to change the effect, a cause from outside this network is needed, a cause from outside, a cause from outside the area, a cause previously separated from the network that interacts with this network for the first time, a cause previously not taken into account in the calculations to calculate the effect because it was previously separated from the equation.





For someone to predict absolutely everything, they would have to be separate from absolutely everything and not interact with it in any way, and be outside the scope of it all.

12 Genesis 3:16-19
13 Genesis 2:17 (...) you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it you will certainly die.
14 Deuteronomy 31:20-21
Revelation 4:1 (...) "Come up here, and I will show you the things that must take place"

#10 „Don’t put God to the test”

- means not to expect anything other than the effect of causality.

Many believers are afraid to put God to the test because it is written not to do so[15]. It's not about anything like that. A few examples in which you should not put Causality to the test: do not put your hand into the fire thinking that nothing will happen to you, because you will get burned – cause and effect are clearly defined here; such examples can be multiplied: do not drive recklessly on the road because an accident will happen, do not put your hand in a cage with a tiger because it will bite you, do not jump from a temple because you will hurt yourself, do not kill, do not commit adultery, do not steal...

> For with evil things God cannot be tried, nor does he himself try anyone.

James 1:13 B, see also James 1:13-15

You must not spend the forces obtained by a cause on any purpose other than the intended effect of that cause[16] – otherwise you can never receive these forces from Causality again, because you have put it to the test. Example #1: You are an inventor. You hear that humanity is doing badly – it motivates you, it gives you strength, it drives you, it is your cause. You want to invent some invention for the good of humanity and make it available for free, to the poorest. You spend your previously acquired strength building your work. The work is built. You change your mind by patenting the invention and selling it at high prices. The power from Causality was spent, the goal was not achieved. Example #2: A superior sends you for a purpose and gives you servants who will help you fulfill that purpose and are at your command. Will you spend what your superior has given you for a purpose other than the previously agreed purpose (Matthew 4:5-7)? Will he trust you again? If you receive something from someone for a specific purpose, and if you do something with it other than this purpose, you are not trustworthy – something will not be entrusted to you a second time, regardless of whether it is money, people or strength from God.

Another way of testing God, whether consciously or not, is wishful thinking – when you want to do something, thinking that Causality will lead your action to your desired goal, but rejecting the word from Causality that says you will not succeed. When you ignore the real truth by thinking about what you want to be true. This is your wish – it will not be fulfilled because it is not in accordance with God's "will". You cannot will an effect if there is no cause.

Galatians 6:7 says about God:

> Do not be mislead: God is not one to be mocked.

Then the apostle gives why this should not be done:

> For whatever a person is sowing, this he will also reap.

If you sow roses, do you expect that Causality will cause weeds to grow?
If you do something bad, do you expect to receive good results from Causality of your actions?
Don't mock her like that.

15 Matthew 4:7 (...) You must not put Jehovah your God to the test.
16 Matthew 15:26 In answer he said: "It is not right to take the bread of the children and throw it to the little dogs"

#11 Jesus and God

In Jesus' teachings it is clearly visible that he is guided by Causality. He told us how to act and what the consequences would be, how not to act and why. He used Causality to predict the future.

Jesus drew his strength only from God.

> But Jesus not entrust himself to them because he knew them all

John 2:24

> I do not accept glory from men.

John 5:41

> How can you believe, when you are accepting glory from one another and you are not seeking the glory that is from the only God?

John 5:44

With Causality, he predicted the future:

> But he said: „I tell you, Peter, a rooster will not crow today until you have denied knowing me three times".

Luke 22:34, see also Revelation 1:1

- that's why there is destiny[17].

Jesus did not come to do his own will, but the will of God.

> for I have come down from heaven to do, not my own will, but the will of him who sent me.

John 6:38

At certain moments you may think that some of Jesus' actions don't make sense, they are not logical. For example, how the hell did he heal the sick, multipled food, turn water into wine, walk on water, cast out demons, and finally raise the dead? There must be a greater reason for this: he multiplied the loaves not just to eat, he turned water into wine not just to drink, he walked on water not to impress with his skills, he raised people from the dead and rose from the dead not to live – in this system. These actions are not the final goal, but they are stepping stones to achieve something greater. When this greater goal will be achieved then there will be no need to do these things.

> (...) the Son cannot do a single thing of his own initiative, but only what he sees the Father doing (...)

John 5:19

Jesus did not resurrect, did not heal, did not cast out demons of his own will – Causality did all this through him.

Man does nothing without a reason, but neither does an angel do anything without a reason – Jesus came to Earth and acted on it for a reason.

---

17 Jeremiah 1:4-5 (...) "Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, and before you were born I sanctified you. I made you a prophet to the nations."

How did Jesus cast out demons?
If demons represent some thought, some falsehood, some idea (like, for example, this idea presented by the Devil: about wisdom that does not kill and that will make a person become like a personal god) that is implanted in a person, then the truth that is the word of God expels them and frees the mind from them, and the freed man rests and regenerates his strength that he spent on carrying this idea, this lie.

> But after it became evening, people brought him many demon-posessed ones; and he expelled the spirits with a word, and he cured all who were suffering

Matthew 8:16, see also John 6:63: „The sayings that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life"

Demons represent an idea – and these false ideas live in man until the truth drives them away.

> Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth.

John 17:17

- when the truth is already in a person, the lie that someone tries to introduce into him cannot enter him. In this way, there are no longer two opposing ideas in conflict with each other in the human mind.

Possessed means: fettered. The human mind is shackled by a lie, an idea, a teaching that comes from another mind.

No demon walks the path of Causality. The servant of God who walks the path of Causality casts out the demon with the word of God that God has put into him – truth. He, who is under the influence of a lie, cannot free someone else from a lie – and thus from the enslavement, enormous burdens and torments that this untruth can cause. He, who is bound by the lie of the demon, must also desire to free himself from his influence – without this, freeing himself from the influence of evil is impossible.

To exorcise a demon from a person means to free him from his influence, and he can only immaterially influence the immaterial mind of a person. To break away from Satan's power means to break away from his lying idea, then he will not rule over people. Man is in the image of those who created him. Defeating Satan means defeating the part in yourself that was created by the Devil (his lie) and which was accepted by man. To expel evil, harmful teachings and deadly ideas from others, first you must be free from them.

How did he heal the sick?
Just as Moses and other servants of God "performed" miracles with the help of heavenly powers, so did Jesus.

> He said to him: „When I get there, I will cure him".
> The army officer replied: "Sir, I am not worthy to have you come under my roof, but just say the word and my servant will be healed.
> For I too am a man under authority, having soldiers under me, and I say to this one, ‚Go!' and he goes, and to another, ‚Come!' and he comes, and to my slave, ‚Do this!' and he does it".

Matthew 8:7-9

Angels of God serve only God. If Causality works through you, then angels of God will work with you. Angels of God will listen to the word of God that comes through man, they will carry out the orders of God that come through man. An angel of the true God will not serve a man who serves (even unconsciously) a false god – because then the name of the true God is not sanctified.

Jesus was a healer who saw the invisible in man – with the help of Causality that illuminates these invisible things.

Healing people is pointless if they hurt themselves again, but along with the healing they should be given the knowledge how not to hurt themselves so that the healing would make sense. There is no point in resurrecting them if they kill themselves again, but along with the resurrection, they should be given the knowledge to avoid things that lead to death, so that their resurrection makes sense.

> (...) „See, you have become well. Do not sin anymore, so that something worse does not happen to you".
>
> John 5:14

Are you the son or daughter of man? Jesus was also the son of man. We are human, Jesus was human – sometimes the only way to know how someone is doing something is to put on his shoes and walk his path[18] because there is a difference in knowing the path and walking on it.

> And whoever does not accept this torture sake and follow after me is not worthy of me.
>
> Matthew 10:38 „take not his cross (...)" – most other translations

... and is not worthy of doing deeds like his because the deeds are the result of walking on this path. A son (or daughter) of a man can also be a son (daughter) of God, as was Adam or Jesus. You are a son of God when you do what God tells you.

Religion made him a sacredly unique person, impossible to imitate, saying that not everyone can be one, while he was a human being to show that a human being can do it, showing the way by which anyone can be one. Jesus showed the way – he would not have shown it if he knew that an ordinary person could not follow it.

Causality illuminates before man what is invisible to the physical eye, so that the man who listens to it sees it. In this way, Jesus saw what ordinary people, who are immersed in the darkness of falsehood, cannot see. Jesus saw a way that no man could see – and he went that way.

Jesus did everything that God sent him to do because he fulfilled all the prophecies that were intended for the messiah, as a result he proved that man can live forever. He did it once and for all, without needing any successors to improve his works – you want to be cured with the medicine once and for all, not constantly treated with it. Meanwhile, the line of heads of the church continues to be passed down through subsequent generations.

> Futhermore, many had to become priests in succession because death prevented them from continuing as such, but because he continues alive forever, hist priesthood has no successors.
>
> Hebrews 7:23,24

> Unlike those high priests, he does not need to offer up sacrifices daily, first for his own sins and then for those of the people, because he did this once for all time when he offered himself up.
>
> Hebrews 7:27

If Jesus was the fulfillment of prophecies that came true, let us be the fulfillment of prophecies that will come true.

18 John 14:4 And where I am going, you know the way.

If you are grateful that Jesus "gave his life" for mankind, then show him this gratitude without destroying what he fought for. People do not see in other people the humanity for which Jesus died, and I am not surprised at all because it is not there, but he fought for the humanity that may yet come. Jesus died for sinners – but he did not die for bad people so that they would still be bad people and do evil.

Jesus gave others peace of mind when he took their burdens, which disturb peace of mind and thus make one sick, and placed them on Causality – Jesus did the will of Causality.

Jesus did not agree to the conditions as they were and tried to change them, but could such a man live forever on Earth where people were trying to kill him?

Abandoning pride, honor and dignity – because in what Jesus experienced there was no pride, honor and dignity but glory must be given by Causality[19].

If eternal life can only be achieved through the path of Jesus, then in order to live forever, humanity will face a journey through the Passion – and just as Jesus drank from the cup of God's wrath, so must all humanity[20].

#12 Principle of operation:

CAUSE → EFFECT
What was the first cause? There was no first cause because God has always existed.
Everything that exists has a cause. Every action will not be without effect.

What is a cause? A cause is anything that makes an effect. If a cause does not make an effect, it is not a cause. A cause can be something material: a billiard ball hitting another ball; something immaterial: a code or construct: money, religion, languages; something invisible: the wind; a person. For a cause to be a cause, it must be subject to Causality – a billiard ball that is not subject to Causality cannot be pushed and cannot push another ball, a banknote that is not subject to Causality cannot be exchanged for goods or buy anything, a religion that is not subject to Causality cannot find believers or give them anything, language cannot be spoken to communicate with others or heard to be understood, air pressures do not create wind nor can the wind itself blow away light leaves. It is impossible for a cause not to make an effect, a cause always creates an effect – therefore Causality is The One Who Causes Things To Become. Causality will not leave the cause without effect – even if the cause appeared thousands of years ago, even if the effect were to come thousands of years later – in one way or another.

19 John 8:50 But I am not seeking glory for myself; (...)
John 8:54 If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing. It is my Father who glorifies me (...)
20 Mark 14:36 (...) remove this cup from me. Yet, not what I want, but hat you want
Revelation 16:1 (...) Go and pour out the seven bowls of the anger of God on the earth

Every person should know how Causality works. However, over the centuries it has been tested many times by doing something and expecting completely different results, and people have often died as a result. Causality is characterized by harmony, justice and order of subsequent events. Examples:

- Jesus' example of a sown seed: the seed is sown, it sprouts, it grows into a blade, an ear, and a full grain in the ear. Everything happens gradually, no stage in development is omitted (Mark 4:26-29);
- The water cycle in nature and the circulation of matter in the universe: water evaporates from the seas and oceans, condensation occurs, clouds are formed, snow falls, rain waters plants and creates rivers that flow to the sea (Job 28:25-26, 36:27-28, 37:10-12). Gravitational forces of attraction cause huge amounts of matter to attract each other, creating spherical shapes and heating up this sphere. When the sphere is large enough, thermonuclear reactions begin to occur in it, the matter is transformed into energy and this energy reaches the distant corners of the universe, when the star uses up its energy the fuel explodes scattering its matter across space, and when a black hole is formed, it also loses energy and evaporates. Matter is created from energy;
- God's kingdom does not appear immediately (Luke 19:11; Acts 1:6). First, its members must appear. For the Kingdom of God to cover the entire planet, all other kingdoms, governments, authorities, ideas, systems that are in contradiction with the values of the Kingdom of God must cease to exist. Just as a compelling lie is fought with truth, these systems can be fought with truth and action.

> and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free
>
> John 8:32

This world has lies as its pillar, telling people the truth and proving it, we are destroying this world of this system.

> (...) among whom the god of this system of things has blinded the minds of the unbelievers, so that the illumination of the glorious good news about the Christ, who is the image of God, might not shine through.
>
> 2 Corinthians 4:4

Jesus, Snowden, Luther King, and Nicolaus Copernicus, among others, fought with the truth. They all fought against structures based on lies. There is something wrong if bad people are more willing to act than good people.

Only what is true is subject to Causality. Only a true domino can knock over another domino. A domino block that does not exist cannot turn over another. Falsehood and lies are not subject to Causality – they cannot knock over anything or affect anything. Only what is real can receive from Causality the power to knock over something else, the strength to have an effect.

Hinduism advocates a very close definition of Causality as God:

> „As a man himself sows, so he himself reaps; no man inherits the good or evil act of another man. The fruit is of the same quality as the action” - Mahabharata, xii.291.22
>
> „Happiness comes due to good actions, suffering results from evil actions,
> by actions, all things are obtained, by inaction, nothing whatsoever is enjoyed.
> If one's action bore no fruit, then everything would be of no avail,
> if the world worked from fate alone, it would be neutralized” - Mahabharata, xiii.6.10 & 19
>
> Over time, various schools of Hinduism developed many different definitions of karma, some making karma appear quite deterministic, while others make room for free will and moral agency.

Wikipedia, Karma, Karma in Hinduism (2022)

> The word 'karma' has originated from the Sanskrit root 'kri' which means 'to do' or 'to 'act and react'.
>
> "Karma" literally means "action," and more broadly names the universal principle of cause and effect, action and reaction, which Hindus believe governs all consciousness. Karma is not fate, for we act with what can be described as a conditioned free will creating our own destinies. Karma refers to the totality of our actions and their concomitant reactions in this and previous lives, all of which determine our future. The conquest of karma lies in intelligent action and dispassionate reaction.
>
> Everything that we have ever thought, spoken, done or caused is karma, as is also that which we think, speak or do this very moment.

Wikipedia, Karma in Hinduism, Definitions (2022)

Causality is the God of order, if there was anything that was not subject to it, it would be randomness and chaos. Something comes from nothing if it has no cause.

For an effect to exist in the future, its (prime-)cause must exist now.

Even when cause and effect appear to occur simultaneously, the cause comes first, even by the smallest fraction of time.

When the causes are exactly the same, the result is always the same. The effect cannot be different when the causes are exactly the same.

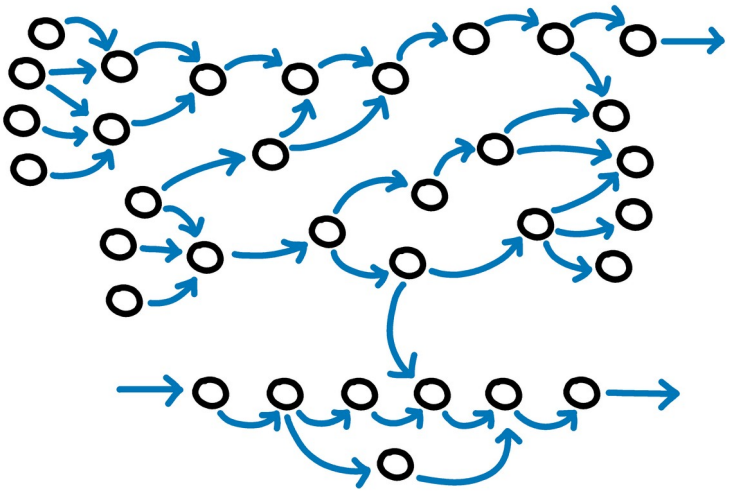
God is one because truth is one because reality is one – how everyone perceives it is a different matter. There are no two opposing truths. You don't have the truth, you can only stand on its side, then the truth will have you.

> Jesus answered: „The first is, ’Hear, O Israel, Jehovah our God is one Jehovah’ ”

Mark 12:29

How does Causality work? Cause makes effect, one event follows another. Since when? From always because God had no beginning.

Sometimes the network of causes and effects is far too complex to understand immediately (and yet it is not chaos but order):



That is why we often hear that "the paths of the Lord are unsearchable[21]."

A large part of causes and effects is invisible to man – because Causality is God who looks on in secret – to repay every cause with an effect.

God's straight paths have become too embroiled with lies and distorted by others, so that it is impossible to follow them to the goal, not to mention the dogmas and teachings of various religions that lead to a blind point. Therefore, straighten God's ways and make his paths straight so that you can finally reach the goal – and not constantly miss it.

They were not afraid of Causality because the knowledge about it was saturated with lies – the meaning of its name was distorted. It was said that a cause would have no effect or that a cause would produce an effect disproportionate to the cause. When God's name will be sanctified again and cleansed of lies, then people will again see why to fear Causality.

Just means: proportional to the cause. God is just because he always acts justly: for a cause it gives an effect. Therefore, nature cannot be evil:

> After that God saw everything he had made, and look! it was very good. (...)
>
> Genesis 1:31

He is the Supreme Judge, which is why humility before this God is so important. The network of causes and effects is too great, therefore no man can be a judge because no man knows this network.

Since Causality makes the natural course of affairs, its action is often confused with the action of a person (who is also subject to Causality), the natural impersonal course of affairs with the action of someone's will. Example: evolution/creation – whether the creation of higher and higher forms of life was an impersonal work or not.

There is nothing you can do to God. You cannot hurt him, give him something good, or do anything bad to him

21 Romans 11:33; Job 37:5, 23

You can't do anything to God. You cannot hurt him, give him anything good, or do anything bad to him[22]. Everything that man does, good or bad, he does not do it for God, but for other people – that is why it was said that these two greatest commandments are similar to each other because man is the culmination of God's creation.

"It happened because you didn't do such and such..." The cause is never not doing something. The cause cannot be nothing. The cause of evil cannot be passivity, and the cause of good cannot be inaction. He who does nothing cannot be guilty of evil nor can he be responsible for something good.

Can be often heard from others that a personal god did evil – but Causality brings good when there are causes for it and creates evil when there are causes for this evil.

> I form light and create darkness, I make peace and create calamity, I, Jehovah, am doing all these things.
>
> Isaiah 45:7

It is very common to confuse cause with effect, effect with cause.

A cyclist lost his bike due to poor security or the actions of a thief?
The girl was raped because she didn't wear enough covering clothes or by the rapist?
A peaceful state is defeated because it had no army or because another nation attacked it?
Was the man killed because he did not defend himself or because he was attacked?

He wouldn't have to secure it if there wasn't a thief who was stealing.
She wouldn't have to worry about her outfit if there wasn't a harmful rapist.
It wouldn't have to have an army if there was no aggressor.
He wouldn't have to defend himself if there was no attacker.

The sick person die because of the disease or because he could not afford the medicine?
He wouldn't have to look for a cure if it weren't for the cause of his illness.

Not to confuse cause with effect – the cause always comes first.

Can often be seen how people are no longer guided by Causality and are instead guided by other authorities. In fact, such behavior has been evident since the first humans. The history of humanity has shown that people began to need authorities because they could not count on themselves. Authorities such as leaders, rulers, clergy, various holy texts, teachings, ideas. Often happens that fictional characters are elevated to the rank of idols and authorities who have a greater influence on others than real people and events.

God will not tell you with words in your language about something that you see right in front of your eyes – then you need an intermediary, a translator who can tell you about it. In the beginning, people did not need intermediaries to speak the words of God to them, but the intermediary is sent to break through the lies that prevent people from speaking directly to God to proclaim the truth – the word of God.

Those who do not want be guided by Causality are not guided by common sense.

It's not good that people began to need a book to communicate with God, for Him to tell you what is good and what is bad, for Him to tell you how to act, while a person can talk to Him on his own without anyone's help.

---

22 Job 35:6; Jeremiah 7:19

People refer to the authority of books when what is true does not have to be written down. Whatever is true, even if it is not written down, is the word of God because the word of God is truth.

Looking at authorities blur your eyesight because they think for you, because you are using their eyes, not yours. You rely on them if you can't rely on yourself. Why is it necessary to write commandments or laws on stone tablets or codes? Because they are not written in the human heart.

There is a certain condition among people when, for some reason, they cannot judge the nature of certain things themselves, but they need others to tell them about it[23]. Can't you see things as they are? Do you need to be told about them even if you see them yourself? It is similar with a wall with blue paint written on it: "This is blue paint." Do you need someone to tell you about a truth that is so obvious that it is exposed all the time? Why is this so, what is the reason that you cannot see it?

Neither through sciences, books, deep intellect, holy books or teachings can one realize that God is Causality. It is Causality that establishes whoever knows something or who is conscious of something – similarly (and in the same way) as a cause produces an effect. Little children know this instinctively, subconsciously. It is impossible to learn that God is Causality because Causality itself gives knowledge and wisdom and it is their source. No amount of wisdom will make one understand God because wisdom comes from God. No treasures or money can buy wisdom, just as no effect can buy its cause.

The greatest secrets were before our eyes.

You see things as they are if you have healthy eyes.
You hear sounds as they are if you have healthy ears.
You think about something real if you have a healthy mind – not soaked in any lies. The tool for receiving and processing information works well if it is not damaged. You want to rely on your senses, not forever rely on someone else.

If you need authorities, idols to motivate you, or even motivating epic music or quotes from famous people to do good, it means that you alone cannot do good without them, on your own. You cannot do good without the faith that comes from looking at others. In this case, you can only be good to the extent that others allow you to be, and you will achieve nothing beyond those authorities.

There is no need for philosophers, prophets, teachers, leaders or other intermediaries if you yourself receive the light of wisdom directly from Causality. Then you receive the divine word first hand. People have told others about God many times (unconsciously almost always untrue), but Causality can tell you about itself.

The power to change reality must come from reality. Don't be guided lies to change reality. Whoever does not listen to the truth cannot be a child of God, because children of God listen to the word of God.

The source of your power must be other than authorities who die, emotions, or bodily impulses, because when they are gone, your power to act will be gone. As for your strength, do not place your trust in something that will weaken itself.

People are guided by various authorities who sometimes say two contradictory things, but one who is guided by Causality will never be wrong.

23 Jeremiah 13:12 Do we not already know that every largr jar should be filled with wine?

“Apart from Causality, I need no authority to do good or to know what is good and what is evil.” Even the greatest authorities are not needed when you are guided by Causality.

People look to successful people to be like them. But what if their success was undeserved, unearned, not their own effort? Is it then impossible for every other person to achieve this success, that it is only available to a select few? Would there be enough "raw material" for every other person to forge this success? Success advices are given by successful people, not by those who couldn't succeed.

Deserved means – when we are its cause, when we did not use the strength of someone else to achieve it, when the cause of our success did not come from someone else. Was Jesus' success deserved? Would anyone else be able to repeat what he did on their own? Is the success of the rich deserved? Can every person achieve their success by his own work and his own effort?

The greatest authorities are very high, as if in heaven. People look up at them to be guided by them. These authorities were not always good because they did not always bring good fruit, so people stopped following them – thus they were thrown out of Heaven.

When someone has life in himself, he is self-sufficient and does not need other suppliers of the means of life to rule him, forcing him to do anything in exchange for the power needed to live. Then those authorities who have the desire to rule are redundant.

Authorities guide people – so people are not 100% responsible for their actions. When authorities will fall and stop guiding people, then a person will bear the full measure of responsibility for their actions. It will not be possible to blame the system, government or religion – all the blame for actions will fall on the person. Then a person will want these mountains of authorities to fall on him and cover him from the effect of his actions – from the effect of Causality.

When all authorities will be removed, then Causality will be the greatest authority, as in the beginning, and humanity will need no other ruler.

> You shall have no other gods before me.
>
> Exodus 20:3 (NIV)

You will not listen to anyone else but Causality because it always tells the truth – so that you will not be lied to by someone else and you will have to bear the consequences of your action, your disobedience to Causality.

Causality is God.
There is no one or anything that is not subject to Causality.
In computer science, there are no truly random numbers, only pseudo-random ones, this is because the value to create random numbers would have to come from somewhere, the random number would have to have its own cause, its initial value from which it would have to come. The result of throwing dice is determined by the angle and speed of the throw, the surface and the slightest imperfections in the structure of the dice. Causality reigns in nature, in space, in man and his thoughts. Causality rules everything, from the smallest atoms to human life, from the human body to his mind. Is there anything that has no cause?

> Jehovah has firmly estabilished his throne in the heavens;
> And his kingship rules over everything.

Psalms 103:19, see also Jeremiah 23:23,24

> (...) He is still holding firmly to his integrity, even through you try to incite me against him to destroy him for *no reason*.

Job 2:3

> Experience teaches us no less clearly than reason that people consider themselves free simply because they are aware of their actions and unaware of the reasons by which those actions are determined.

Baruch Spinoza *Ethics*

It rules everyone and everything material.

> Do I not fill the heavens and the earth?
> declares Jehovah.

Jeremiah 23:24

> Here I am, Jehovah, the God of all mankind (...)

Jeremiah 32:27

It rules everyone and everything immaterial.

> "Even if Babylon should ascend to the heavens,
> even if she should fortify her towering strongholds, from me her destroyers will come,"
> declares Jehovah

Jeremiah 51:53

> (...) So I will cast you out as profane from the mountain of God and destroy you, o covering cherub, away from the stones of fire.

Ezekiel 28:16

The books of the Bible that clearly talk about Causality are Proverbs and Ecclesiastes.

A name is given after its properties and features. Knowing a name does not always mean you know the features, attributes and properties.

Causality has all the divine attributes of an immortal, all-powerful, just, loving God – the giver of fulfillment of desires, laws, governments, authorities, wisdom, life, strength, and everything.

Causality governs everything and it is it that establishes the laws of nature, the rules of the universe and the principles of physics, the regulations of what is visible and invisible.

For the follower of a personal god, this will certainly be something new, regardless of whether he is a Catholic, a follower of Allah, or a worshiper of one of the deities of Hinduism. But the God of the Bible from the beginning to the Apocalypse behaves, has the features and attributes of causality, and if it is mentioned that God did something, it always turns out that his messenger is behind it, someone who is not guided by his own will but by God and his word – truth.

It is not right to serve someone you have learned from a book.

> (...) If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing (...)
>
> John 8:54

- similarly, if this book speaks for itself and is not reflected in reality, the values presented in it are not true.

Make me understand your god as I made you understand mine, follower of a personal god, tell me in the same simple way about your god as I told you about mine: God is Causality. It is not good to serve someone who is wrapped in a holy mystery and is beyond comprehension[24]. Even worse is simply telling yourself every day that someone exists without any response (let alone a firm and decisive response that you can undeniably believe) from him. Something that does not exist will not answer you, much less save you from real danger. It is a dangerous belief to wait for someone else to help you with their actions, in the face of the danger of your death, because you trust in him and do not act yourself. This belief threatens your life.

If I understand god, then I can worship him. How can I worship something that I do not understand and, according to some, will never know? How can you stake your life on something you don't know?

If you think that there are many moments in the Bible in which a personal god shows his activity, look carefully again: God does nothing alone, but there is always someone who carries out his word: God sent an angel to save three Hebrews from the fiery furnace. God sent Moses to Egypt through a messenger in a burning bush. It is written: "*let us* create man" and "*let us* confuse the languages"[25]. God placed strong angels on the way to the tree so that people could not live forever[26]. Angels (Greek: Ἄγγελος – "messenger") have intervened, created, set things straight and helped humanity many times.

> Then I heard the voice of Jehovah saying: „Whom shall I send, and who will go for us?"
> And I said: „Here I am! Send me!"
>
> Isaiah 6:8

God didn't do anything for Jesus.
And so this one idea was spread to millions of people who do nothing because they think that God will solve the world's problems for them, but God does nothing alone.

Jesus listened to God by creating:

> Because by means of him all other things were created in the heavens and on the earth, the things visible and the things invisible, whether they are thrones or lordships or governments or authorities. All other things have been created through him and for him. Also, he is before all other things, and by means of him all other things were made to exist.
>
> Colossians 1:16, 17

It was Causality that pushed Jesus to create, just as Causality (the appropriate functions of the body and the environment) causes us to wake up from sleep – we wake up from sleep not of our own will.

Something, someone is subject to Causality if it has no will of its own – then Causality controls it, governs it and sends it to fulfill the "intent" of Causality.

---

24 1 Timothy 6:16 (...) whom no man has seen or can see (...)
25 Genesis 1:26 and 11:7
26 Genesis 3:24

If God can give life through man (e.g. resurrection through Jesus), can God pronounce a death sentence, kill through man? If he can give good through man, can he do just harm or judge through man? He can. Can God do evil through man? No, because Causality does not do evil, only justice and judgment that may seem evil to man. Through man, God's acts are fulfilled, whatever they are, only if man does not carry out his own desires or will, but the will of God.

> And he has given him [Jesus] authority to do judging, because he is the Son of man.
>
> John 5:27

> If I expel the demons by means of Beelzebub, by whom do your sons expel them? This is why they will be your judges.
>
> Luke 11:19

> Men of Nineveh will rise up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it, because they repented at what Jonah preached. But look! something more than Jonah is here. The queen of the south will be raised up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it, for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon. But look! something more than Solomon is here.
>
> Matthew 14:10

When we are hungry, Causality makes us look for food, when we are cold, Causality makes us look for warmth. In the same way, Causality caused Jesus, listening to it, to do its works:

> Do you not believe that I am in union with the Father and the Father is in union with me? The things I say to you I do not speak of my own originality, but the Father who remains in union with me is doing his works.
>
> John 14:10

Even when Jesus was dying on a stake, he had to fend for himself:

> About the ninth hour, Jesus called out with the loud voice, saying:
> „*E'li, E'li, la'ma sabachtha'ni?*" that is:
> „My God, my God, why you have forsaken me?"
>
> Matthew 27:46

Jesus taught his disciples how to pray:

Our Father in the heavens, let your name be sanctified.

We are to sanctify his name.
To sanctify his name means to show the meaning[27] of his name.

Whoever goes against what Causality says defames the name of God by showing others that with the One Who Causes Things To Become it is impossible – and it does not become – because he interrupts the path of causality he was following. Jesus ultimately sanctified Causality because he showed that with the right causes, the result is eternal life, even through resurrection.

Let your Kingdom come.

Since the kingdom of God is among us[28], we are to become members of that kingdom.
Thy kingdom come – means: Thy rule come.

Let your will take place, as in heaven, also on earth.

We are to do his will.

Give us today our bread for this day;

Food comes from the earth because we are the ones who take care of it or not.
- because the Earth was given to people and they are its rulers.

And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors.

We are to forgive others so that we can be forgiven[29], so that we can enjoy a clear conscience.

And do not bring us into temptation, but deliver us from the wicked one.

- regardless of who the wicked person is – whether he is an invisible being or a human being.

Don't say it with words, say it with deeds – let your word also be truth. The spoken code should also be executed.

We should ask God not to give us something, but to show us how we can achieve it ourselves.

Many followers of a personal god pray to him, having the impression that God listens to them – it's a placebo – there is no response and yet you want to believe. Just thinking that it works is effective.

> Many believe that prayer can aid in recovery, not due to divine influence but due to psychological and physical benefits. It has also been suggested that if a person knows that he or she is being prayed for it can be uplifting and increase morale, thus aiding recovery. Many studies have suggested that prayer can reduce physical stress, regardless of the god or gods a person prays to, and this may be true for many worldly reasons. According to a study by Centra State Hospital, „the psychological benefits of prayer may help reduce stress and anxiety, promote a more positive outlook, and strengthen the will to live." Other practices such as yoga, t'ai chit, and meditation may also have a positive impact on physical and psychological health.
>
> (...) brain activity during meditation indicates that people who frequently practice prayer or meditation experience lower blood-pressure, lower heart rates, decreased anxiety, and decreased depression.

Wikipedia, Prayer, Efficacy of prayer healing

27 Jeremiah 23:27 They intend to make my people forget my name by the dreams they relate to one another, just as their fathers forgot my name because of Baal. [to forget a name means to forget the meaning of that name]

28 Luke 17:20, 21 (...) "The Kingdom of God is not coming with striking observableness nor will the people say, 'See here!' or, 'There!' For look! the Kingdom of God is in your midst."

29 Matthew 6:14-15 For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; (...)

God not only gave power to his angels but also to others – God gave Satan power over people:

> Then Jehovah said to Satan:
> „Look! He is in your hand! Only do not take his life!”

Job 2:6 and 1:12

> I will not speak with you much more, for the ruler of the word is coming, and he has no hold on me.

John 14:30

> Then the Devil said to him:
> „I will give you all this authority and their glory, because it has been handed over to me, and I give it to whomever I wish.”

Luke 4:6

This is how Causality works: If something is crooked, it remains deformed for generations, forever, unless someone corrects it. Many plants and fruits have been changed for human needs, such as watermelon and corn. They remain so changed forever, their seeds will bear the same fruit every generation. In the same way, what is in a person, whether good or bad, whether it is the DNA code or his thoughts and ideas – this will be passed on to the next generation, either through reproduction or teaching. This is Causality. From an early age, children are guided by Causality; they consider what the effect and reaction of parents will be to the action they take. This is their wisdom of predicting the future, through Causality. For them there is no other God. "Of such is the kingdom of God[30]."

> Our forefathers who sinned are no more, but we must bear their errors.

Lamentations 5:7

To bear their errors is to bear the consequences of their deeds:

> (...) bringing punishment for the error of fathers upon sons, upon the third generation and upon the fourth generation of those who hate me

Exodus 20:5 and Deuteronomy 5:9

Subsequent generations correct the mistakes of previous generations or make them worse. Ancestors left their offspring with the consequences of their actions.

30 Matthew 19:14; Mark 10:14

Money

God hates money.
If you are religious and you would hear this, would you stop using them?

How money works. Principle of operation.
The more money, the less are they worth.

A commodity that is valuable in our eyes is evaluated (in terms of usefulness, rarity, effort needed to create it, and others), and the higher its rating, the higher its price.

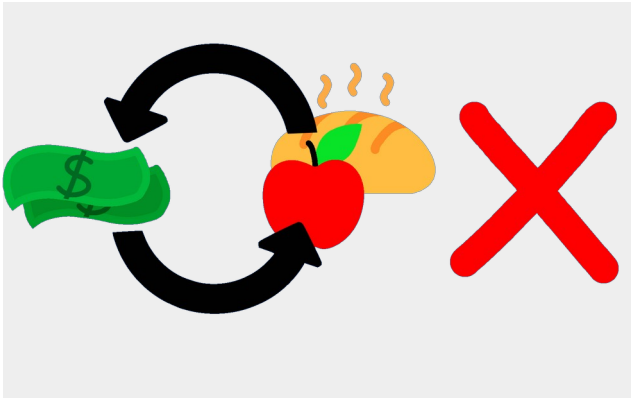
Money itself has no value if it cannot be exchanged for goods or services – money has value because it can be exchanged for goods or services, when there are no goods, money is useless because it can no longer represent a commodity that no longer exists.

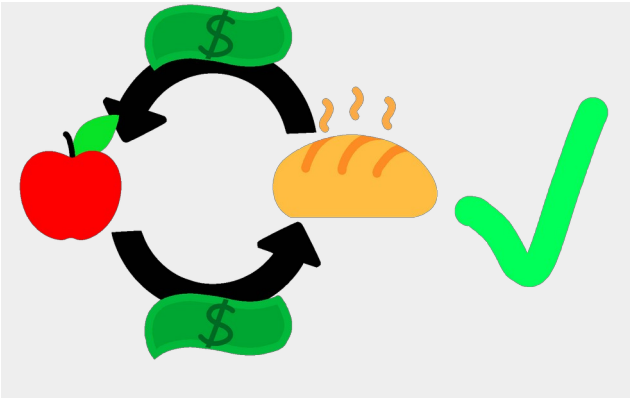
Money works, it has the power to exchange only when the other person accepts it. Therefore, money has value if a person believes that it has value.

I'm giving 100% but I'm not getting 100%. The result of the work should be 100% proportional to the work put into it. If I work for someone making a product and then that person sells the product for a higher price, then I, to buy this commodity that he sells, will give more money for it than the work I put into it. I give a lot of myself, but the cause does not equal the effect, the effect is not a full consequence of the cause – while others work less and the result of their work, money, is greater than mine.

Why is money made? The reason for existence.
One of many first questions people ask when it comes to money is, "How money are made?", it should be followed by: "Why is money being made?".

Money was created to be exchanged for goods, not commodities to be exchanged for money.





Money was created to make it easier to exchange goods and services, not to exchange goods to have more and more money. Money is an aid in the exchange (of goods). Money is not the thing *for which* exchange occurs – because money itself has no value, goods have value.

Money is a means (material or not) that can be exchanged for goods or services that one desires (that's why money allows you to fulfill desires – but not all of them) from someone who wants to exchange (who wants to sell) for a certain amount of these means of payment by accepting a given means of payment believing it has value.

The medium of exchange of goods (be it gold, money or anything else) was created to satisfy the desire of possessiong things by exchanging them for goods or services and thus preventing the act of stealing what gave rise to the desire.

The reason money exists is because of people's desires. Money allows to fulfill them. Something is valuable to a person if it allows him to fulfill his desires and aspirations – what is valuable to him is relative, another person will not consider this thing as something valuable because he does not have a desire that would fulfill it.

The opposite of money. The enemy of money.

> No one can be slave for two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will stick to the one and despise the other. You cannot slave for God and for Riches.

Matthew 6:24

No one can be a slave of two masters whose orders conflict with each other, are contradictory, and cannot be obeyed by both. If you cannot serve these two at the same time, it means that there is a conflict of interests, a conflict of completely opposite values that they represent. What are these values?

Where there is money, there is no love for one's neighbor. Those who print money will never print enough of it to distribute to crowds out of love for their neighbor. Therefore you cannot be a slave to two masters.

Gold is valuable because it is rare, it is the same with money, so the amount of money is and must be limited, so you cannot give money to all people to be rich, therefore you cannot show love to other people with money in order to love all people. If love costs money, humanity is lost, if people can fulfill God's commandments only if they have money, humanity will face destruction. If love for one's neighbor costs money, the poor are lost in a world where mammon rules. “The love of the majority will grow cold” when there are no means to express love. Where are these means?

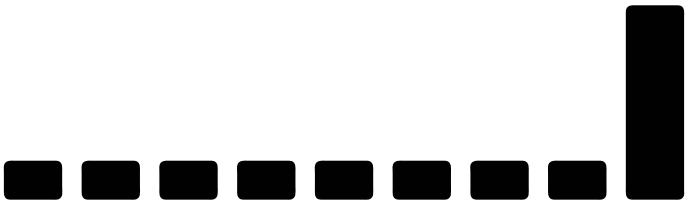
Money on the street, Venezuela, 2019

The amount of money is limited because the amount of goods and commodities is also limited. This does not mean that there cannot be enough goods for everyone.

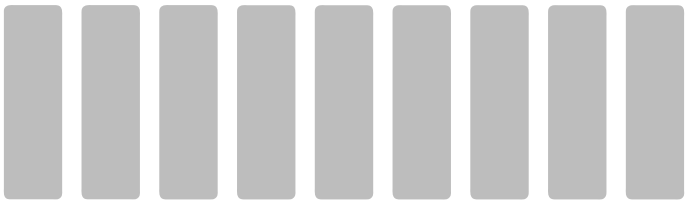
To be rich you have to have a lot of money. For your money to have value, the total amount of money in circulation must be limited, so others cannot necessarily be as rich as you – otherwise the money will lose value – both yours and others. For you to be rich, others *necessarily* must be poor.

Since the amount of money must be limited and since there are no rich people when the amount of money is evenly distributed...

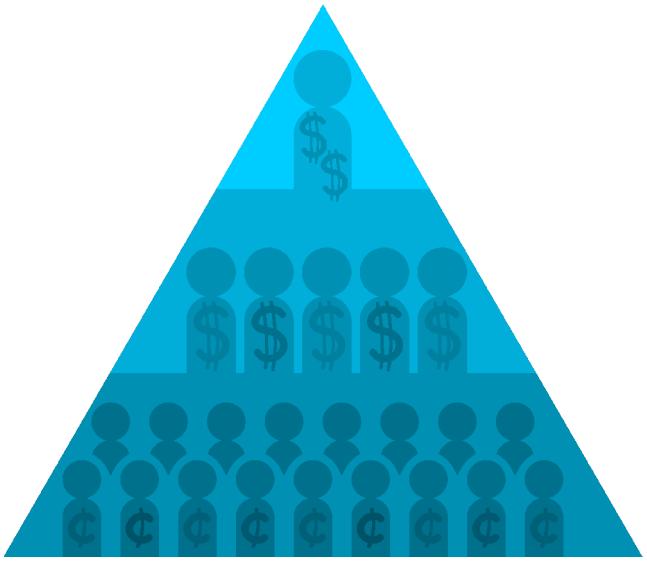
...then a rich man must be greedy to remain rich because he cannot allow others to have as much money as he has...



- therefore it is impossible for a rich man to make others rich and to make others have the same prosperity as himself – at least not in the world of a system where money rules.



People are envious of the rich for the things they buy with their lots of money, but they can't have that much money because someone has to have less money to maintain the rarity of money and, therefore, its value. Therefore, if there are rich people, there *must* also be poor people. Without the poor, there are no rich. Without slaves there are no masters. Therefore, it often happens that the poor are forced to commit evil not of their own will, but simply to survive. This state of affairs will exist in every society ruled by a system based on money. In a money system, not everyone can be winners at the same time.



Those who earn the most money are those who are in high positions, those who can do something and know their profession, but not everyone can be leaders, directors, bosses or presidents. How can we give the living conditions of those high on the pyramid of power to those at the bottom? After all, paradise conditions were once available to ordinary people for free.

If people want to earn more and more, more and more money is needed in circulation. If there is more and more money, that money will have less value than before.

Only individuals live in prosperity because all others work for their prosperity. It can't be like this.

No amount of money, even hard-earned over years, will make a good person receiving it want to live in the evil world of the system – time and fortunes invested in one's own children do not necessarily make them want to live in the external conditions surrounding them, as well as in the internal conditions that will appear in them through what is outside.

When a slave is freed from his master, the master no longer lives in as much wealth and prosperity as before because the flow of goods and prosperity from the slave has been stopped. Countries ruling other slave nations that freed themselves suffered a similar fate – the people living there no longer feel as prosperous as before.

Money cannot bring world-wide prosperity because it cannot be printed beyond measure – when it is exceeded, it always means disaster. When you duplicate money in large quantities, it leads to a decline in its value, but when you multiply goods and products, it leads to prosperity.

The same 10$ today is not equal to the 10$ that existed 10 years ago and will not be equal to the 10$ that will exist in 10 years, but the same apple that existed 10 years ago will be the same apple that will exist in 10 years. The value of money over time is different because it represents the scarcity of the goods being purchased and the level of greed of the seller who sets the price, but the value/property of the goods over time is the same.

The monetary earnings are disproportionate to the work put in. The result of a fruit grower's work is fruit, but when the final result of his work is money, the power put into the work is not proportional to the result obtained – someone *has to pay* for these disproportions. In this way, many rich people directly profit from the work of working people. Do not exchange what has true value for what has no true value.

A painter paints a picture. It takes him less than a month. It's worth millions. Someone works in a factory for years. He sets aside this money for a specific purpose. There comes a crash, inflation, suddenly these savings are worthless – you can throw them into an oven to warm yourself. When you work regardless of money, the effort you put into work is 100% proportional to the strength you put into it. When you work in the field, the result of your work is a harvest. When you build a house, the result of your work is an apartment. When you produce goods and commodities, they are 100% the result of your work – until you start selling them for money.

Work must be done to obtain the result of work. But money distorts the value of labor when it is the result of work, then work does not equal the result of work.

Some people work less and get more money, others work more and get less money – the cause is not proportional to the effect.

Most people wouldn't buy work from others with the money they used to work the exact same job.

When you work for money, you only get part of the result of your work – it's not like when Causality gives you 100% of the result of your effort.

Money is not fair. It's no wonder, then, that people crave justice and pursue it in various ways.

There is nothing wrong with work – with work that gives you a reward, a result that is absolutely proportional to the effort put into it – and this can only be achieved without using money.

When you raise some plants or animals, or produce any good or service, if the priority is money rather than love for your neighbor, then you will abandon what you are doing if it does not produce a profit. In 2018, some Polish fruit growers threw away tons of apples due to the unprofitability of selling them. In 2020 in the United States, hundreds of tons of potatoes that no one wanted to buy were wasted. Things that actually have value are destroyed.

When food is produced for the sake of the stomach, the food is not wasted because everyone has hunger, when food is produced for the sake of money, food is wasted because not everyone has money.

There is no such thing as a fair price or fair market competition because every seller wants to bought from him and strives to achieve this in various ways, and tries to break the chains imposed by various institutions that slow down his business under the pretext of "honesty" and fair play. Against fast business sharks, slow minnows have no chance.

Taking (worthless) money from the rich won't do anything – not wasting (valuable) goods is the solution, not wasting what actually has value. It's not about taking from the rich and giving to the poor – it's about giving to you yourself.

The value of money cannot be allowed to be valued more than the value of goods.

Just like as all people will not withdraw all their money from banks at once, similarly, all people will not start not using money at once – they earned it with difficulty, they trust in them as to their existence[31]. Unless money loses its purpose and its power. This can happen in two cases:

- When there are a lot of goods. You don't buy things when there's a lot of them, enough of them, so that you can take them for free. They become immeasurable treasures with no monetary value. Money loses value if a product is so worthless that there is so much of it that you can afford to waste it.
- When there are no goods. When a commodity is rare, it takes a lot of money to buy it. When a product is so rare that it is difficult to obtain, its price increases even further. When the product is finally gone, you cannot buy it even with all your money – then the money completely loses its value, even though it exists, in relation to the valuable thing that does not exist.

When money loses its power and will be no longer used, then the path to goals that could only be achieved through money will be closed.

To destroy money means to destroy its value in a person's mind – not to tear up all the banknotes or melt all the coins – because the value of money is in the mind, nowhere else.

Money derives its value from a person's faith in it – just as a ruler derives his power from the devotion and obedience of his subjects.

When you give goods to everyone: food, clothing, shelter, safety – everyone is rich; when you give everyone a lot of money, everyone is poor. To achieve prosperity, we need to produce goods, not money. Printing more money makes people poorer.

Investing in money is risky and uncertain. Investing your strength in serving Causality is a sure gain.

31 Matthew 19:23-24 (...) it is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of God.

Money has no value to someone for whom the things it can buy have no value.

Money has no value, goods have value, just as money has no value to a monkey, but bananas do. Only enslaved monkey uses money to exchange it for bananas.

A policeman, a soldier – if he serves not because of an idea but because of money – he is a mercenary. When you are a benefactor for the sake of money, you are not a benefactor, you are a businessman.

> No one can serve two masters. Either you will hate the one and love the other, or you will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and money.
>
> Matthew 6:24 (NIV)

However, there is some inaccuracy here due to other translations. The word *Money* or *Mammon* appears in most translations (Greek: Μαμμωνα = mammon). Mammon is money, any amount. However, *riches* are undefined: for some, you will be rich when you have $1000, for example in some countries with hyperinflation; For some, wealth may be $1'000'000'000. In this verse, in the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures, the meaning has been distorted, the line has been blurred, up to what amount of money we become servants of God, and up to what amount of cash we are not. Making money was not the purpose for which Jesus came into the world. No amount of money will save the world or make life better. Just look at those countries with inflation, so much cash was printed that it became practically worthless[32]. Money was increasing, goods were decreasing. Even though more money was printed, the value of money decreased, the value of goods increased.

Financial aid (either for individuals or entire countries) will do nothing if their poverty is the result of something, not the cause. And this something (be it politics, religion, management, wars or anything else) needs to be repaired or even destroyed.

Economic aid (whether for poor African countries, nations with inflation or others) will not produce the desired results if political slavery is the source of the poverty of nations. If the system is the source of evil, only systemic methods can overcome it. But to defeat him, you cannot use his methods or play according to the laws and rules he established – because when you come to power through the machines of the system, you will obey his laws and not change them. To fight the system you cannot be part of it. This is why it has been observed many times that the movement against the collapse of the system never arose within the government, but from outside, from the "lower layers" of society.

> Does any one of you who has a dispute with another dare to go to court before unrighteous men, and not before the holy ones? (...)
>
> 1 Corinthians 6:1-8

Don't join him – the Kingdom of God is not part of this world[33].

Will members of God's Kingdom use the laws of nations if they conflict with law of God? Will you invoke to imperfect, tainted law? Are you going to court of the system against what the system has done to you? Would you like to be tried by the court of the Nazi system? Or would your actions be judged in medieval Salem? Do you want to be judged by a system whose pillar is the law of communism or democracy – when the majority decides about you for you? Should the son of God[34] accept the judgment of another nation concerning him? Just as a citizen of one nation does not benefit from the laws of another country, or like a foreign law meted out the defeated in Nuremberg,

32 See inflation in Venezuela and Zimbabwe
33 John 18:36 (...) My Kingdom is no part of this world (...)
34 John 1:12,13 However, to all who did receive him, he gave authority to become God's children (...)

or like Hong Kong did not agree with the legal provisions of China, or like Jesus was put on trial in his day. As long as people obey the laws of nations, God's law cannot be obeyed, and therefore the Kingdom of God cannot come. In many cases, what is a crime under state law is not so under God's law, and what is illegal against the United States of America is not so under God's law; what has been acquitted by the law of the courts of nations is guilty before God because the judgment of Causality for evil deeds is the evil consequences of deeds.

Jesus solved problems without money because the cause of these problems is not money.

What makes a person a citizen of a nation? Citizenship card? Birth on his land? A person is a citizen of a country if he obeys its laws and adheres to its values. What makes a person belong to a religion? Sultana? Rosary? A person belongs to a religion if he follows its commandments. That's why you don't recognize these people by their appearance, but by their actions. Just as Poland was in the hearts of Poles, although they did not have their own land, similarly the Kingdom of God is in the hearts of its members, although all the lands of the whole world belong to others.

A nation is not a land but people (of the same ideas), and the land (and everything on it) is conquered by them when they exist on it.

He, who does not recognize the ruler, does not have to obey his laws, orders, rules.

Is it rebellion when a person abandons the laws of the nation into which they had no choice to be born and raised? Is it treason to abandon the values of the country in which they were raised when they had no other option?

Was Jesus an Israelite? Did Jesus obey all the laws of Israel?

He who is not a citizen of a given country, who does not belong to a given religion, system, is not subject to the laws, rules, regulations, commandments of that nation, religion, system. ~~Even if the land he stands on belongs to another religion or system.~~ The land he has under his feet is his, wherever he goes, because he can do whatever he wants with it – it doesn't belong to anyone else because no one else can stand on the exact same piece of land he is standing, and thus – control it. And on its small piece of land there prevail the laws, the reign, the beliefs of those who walk on it.

Moreover, your actions are judged by the Highest Court – Causality, the result of its judgment is called "effect". The laws of nations are not God's law, some state laws are even contrary to God's law! Therefore, the judgment of the courts of the nations is not the judgment of God, because they do not judge you according to the law of God.

A person does not have the opportunity to choose which country he wants to be born in, but he does have the opportunity to choose whether he wants to be part of this country, this society, this system – and whether to submit to it or not.

Recognize the rights that you have and the freedoms that God has given you – rights that nations and systems do not recognize. The fact that I have the mere ability to do something (whether good or bad) means that I have been given the right to do it by God. These rights were used by, among others, Jesus (the right to do good) and Satan (the right to do evil).

In the lands of nations their laws exist. As long as I live, and the ideas within me, the earth beneath my feet is the land of the Kingdom of God. The land conquered by peace.

The system are the structures (groups of structures) based on laws, commandments, regulations, beliefs, ideas that direct the minds (and therefore the bodies and actions) of groups of people to govern them. Groups of structures working together in the name of a idea, higher cause. System controls and influences almost every aspect of human life – you feel it when you go to the store, when you turn on the TV, when you go to church...

Monarchy, republic, capitalism, socialism, fascism, Nazism, Buddhism, Hinduism, Islam... the structures of democratic states, the structures of communist nations, the structures of the Catholic Church – these are examples of different systems.

The system is not the material world or the Internet – law, ideas, propaganda, beliefs or commandments can be engraved on material tablets, on material paper, they can flow through a telephone receiver or through an internet cable.

The people who are driven by the system are part of the system because the system cannot function itself without its subjects.

When two people decide something between themselves and stick to it, similarly larger groups or nations write down their resolutions and ideas and stick to them.

Why the system was created?
Systems were created to give people the opportunity to fulfill their desires, and thus to tame the evil nature of people caused by the inability to fulfill their desires, and thus to prevent their evil from coming back to them in the form of consequences, and thus to prevent these bad consequences from killing them – so the systems build a path for man, along which he will reach his goal, his desire, thus remaining alive.

People often choose the wrong path to their desires, which results in thefts, murders, adulteries, lies – to avoid all this, the system tries to tame the evil nature of people caused by their desires.

> Consequently, Jehovah saw that man's wickedness was great on the earth and that every inclination of the thoughts of his heart was only bad all the time.
>
> Genesis 6:5

The system exists for those, for the sake of those who cannot better behave and manage themselves *in society*. Does a system exist for those who choose the path of loneliness? Crowds and peoples who need and want to be ruled establish authority over themselves, does a solitary individual need a ruler? A solitary person has his ruler whom he obeys or not – Causality.

When people behave like animals, what is human will not speak to them. There is something terribly wrong if an animal behaves more human than a human. If your behavior does not differ from that of an animal, you will be treated like one. It is often seen that man behaves like an animal in order to survive, when the necessary means of survival are taken away from him – or rather, when he is taken away from the possibility of fulfilling his desires, then rather the animal behaves more human because it does not have those desires that drive man to savagery when he cannot fulfill them.

Because the system exists, it must have had a reason for its existence, its cause – therefore the system got its power from Causality.

> Then the Devil said to him:
> „I will give you all this authority and their glory, because it has been handed over to me, and I give it to whomever I wish”.
>
> Luke 4:6

Causality is the source of power – it establishes kings and rulers, from it the leaders received power over the population – because they listened to its word and were subordinate to its commandments. Causality enlightens the man who listens to it and the man is enlightened – then other people who are immersed in darkness follow his light – in this way Causality gives this man power.

How does the system work?
The purpose of the system (regardless of what nation or religion) is to rule and lead people – the final creation of God.

What system gives:

- Laws and regulations. Without them, the present society as a group cannot function.
- Money. Banknotes issued by the state are legal tender. Although the system provides the opportunity to obtain living conditions for the body, it does not enable living conditions for the spirit.
- The system organizes society: the exchange of goods, it protects its subjects, and it tries to satisfy physical and mental needs.
- The system can't give you anything because itself has nothing. The system has a population because the population serves it, and this population produces and owns these goods, the system tells how to produce them, how to manage them, how to distribute them.

What the system cannot give:

- Eternal life. It can be seen that the system, its institutions and subordinate organizations still function keeping in mind that people die: hospitals, cemeteries, prayers for the dead. The system wants to last forever, but it does not allow its subjects to last forever.
- Peace. If a country produces bombs, weapons and armed military, they exist for a purpose that is not peace. "But it exists for our security, for defense." Still, not for peace – if force responds to force. The foundations of every nation's territories are based on war. Peace does not use any tools of war. If blood is shed for a generation, either someone else's or your own, and if it dies, then the blood shed was meaningless. Moreover, it is stupid to shed blood for the nation, high ideas and honor if these people die because the nation and ideas are for man, and not man for them, because the final value on earth is man, who is the finalization of all creation, and not any lesser values, and there is no honor in death, when you die for someone who will die anyway. When you go to war – no matter which side – the paradise conditions in your spirit, which are focused on peace, are shaken, which is why you can often hear about mental illnesses of people who were at war; War is bad – when you know this in your mind and yet you go to war, you destroy your mind.

Since man is born already surrounded by a system that has everything a person needs to live, it is no wonder that this person becomes part of the system, so do not blame him if he does not believe in another way.

A system are structures based on laws, beliefs and ideas. For example:

- the police structure is built differently and functions differently in a country whose main idea is democracy, and functions differently in a nation where the main idea is communism;
- the structure of the education system may be saturated with doctrines and propaganda while at other times it may be more transparent;
- the structure of the economy is different in a place where capitalism reigns and a different one where socialism rules;
- the structure of spiritual communities and the behavior of their members is different in a religion where the beliefs of people are creating the Catholic Church, and different where many teachings create the Protestant Church.

Financial debt is one of the main ways in which we are enslaved by the system. Freshly printed money takes its value simply out of nowhere – so penalties and debts and interest come out of nowhere.

The system says: "Money or life!"
But that's what robbers say.

Will you every time obey any orders of anyone who puts a gun to your head?

"I will not work for a system to maintain such a system of things!"

Just as cogs and batteries power a machine, a person powers the system and makes it work. The batteries power the system – some more, some less because some provide more power, others less. Just as the parts of a machine, without questioning, only do what they are entrusted with, similarly people – "they only follow orders". "If you don't work for me, you won't get money to live[35]" – fear is a tool of the system, you are afraid, because what will you do without money? Any part of the machine, when it breaks down and is no longer useful, can be replaced. When all the cogs and batteries are removed from the system's machine, the machine will stop working. By serving the system, you fuel it with your power.

Does this excuse them for "just following orders" or for being a mere cog who fails to see the bigger picture of what they are contributing to? Either way, there will be proportionate consequences for their actions – because Causality will not leave a cause without an effect.

The machine consists of parts. Destroying the entire machine is impossible unless you get rid of individual gears. Dismantling the entire machine is impossible unless you deprive it of its individual, powering batteries. Without getting rid of parts, it is impossible to get rid of the whole. Leave the machine of the system so that you do not get what it brings upon itself.

You impose fines as a judge, you demand interest as a lender, you inflate prices as a seller – but no one wonders whether there is money in circulation for this purpose. In this way, penalties, debts and interest come out of nowhere because no money was printed for this specific purpose. This means that more debts and interest are accrued in the entire system than there is money in circulation – at least the physical money, creating trillions on the screen costs nothing.

The system has you, if you follow its word, laws; God has you if you obey his word, his commandments.

35 Luke 12:15 (...) even when a person has an abundance, his life does not result from the things he possesses.

Laws and regulations are signs on the path of a man walking on it, they are to make the man who is guided by them reach the goal of his desire. Laws are established by the one in power. Only he, who has been given the subordination of the humble who hopes to fulfill his desires thanks to the rule of the ruler, is in power – because he himself is not able to do it. He, who has no desires and wants nothing – does not have to obey the ruler – because what is he for? He who establishes Causality over himself as his ruler, makes the laws and regulations of Causality lead him to the fulfillment of his goals and desires.

When the reign of some system do not give all people the opportunity to fulfill their desires, people do not want to submit to these governments.

Usually when adults say: "Grow up!", they unconsciously mean submitting to the system, becoming an "adult of the system".

It can be often observed that rulers and politicians behave like lords who glorify and exalt themselves before the people, when in fact they should behave and be servants of the people. The splendor and magnificence of kings wrapped in purple, sitting on golden thrones, has already passed – when they first served themselves, giving the people a lower priority.

> (...) the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.
>
> Matthew 20:25-28 (NIV)

"But these laws of the system are for our protection." Yes, they protect but not everyone. If a crime against the law of the system can be paid for with money, then the law exists only for the lower classes.

How often we hear that when the state recognizes an act as a crime in its law, law enforcement officers blindly execute this law, prosecuting those they find guilty. When the state changes its law regarding the same thing, no longer criminalizing it, these law enforcement officers move with the changing law. But the "justice" of the old law has already been done. The servant of the system is guided by the laws of the system.

In some places gambling is prohibited because it is harmful, addictive and dangerous. In most places Powerball is legal. You can buy beer and other alcohol without any major problems. Independent production of moonshine is difficult. Marijuana growers, dealers and possessors are wanted and thrown into prison. Cigarette manufacturers are free. "Why"? The "why" is not the health and well-being of people, but money.

Everyone knows that the system is broken, but people still work for it so that they can live *in it*. No system lasts forever because it is based on a lie, on false values – and a *lie* cannot last forever in the *real* world.

The Word of God is truth, reality. The system, through various means, tries to divert the attention (consciousness) of the population from this reality (although some people themselves do not want to see it) – whether through entertainment, fulfillment of desires or other methods. In general, such machinations were visible in the example of the first people when they tried to lie to them – divert their attention from reality – in order to finally manipulate them.

Rebelling against a system, whether democratic, totalitarian or otherwise, will mean ceasing the flow of goods that that system has been giving you. That is why most people do not delve into searching for a solution and the truth because the price of knowing it is too high for them. When you don't want to be part of a society, you will get nothing from that society.

Over the centuries, it has been possible to observe the emergence and fall of two great systems that alternately held power. One of them has always entrusted ultimate power to one authority, one leader; he was guided by the principle: The general interest above your own; rulers ruled over people. The second system was characterized by the fact that the power was held by people; he focused on the good of the individual; the people ruled the government. Seeking the common good of people is pointless if you, as an individual, cannot live a full life, but building your own good among people who cannot have it is not appropriate.

How can humanity survive without a system?
The Kingdom of God is not a dictatorship forcing anyone, it is not a democracy of the majority, it is the rule of Causality and its orders are word that is literally truth. Not in the name of the system, but in the name of Causality which will bring good as a result when we are the cause of good. When a person takes care of himself, there is no need for the system to supervise him. The Rule of Causality will come if people are willing to submit to it because it is a rule without coercion.

One of the reasons why the system was created is the misuse of freedom by people[36]. Freedom, given by God, was taken away because it was misused.

Those who were born in bondage to the system do not know freedom, they have forgotten what it feels like because they have become accustomed to enslavement.

If you want to be free, don't fight the enslaver, fight the cause that makes the enslaver enslave you – by doing so you will take away from him the power by which he enslaves you. It's really bad if the power and reason by which he enslaves you is yourself.

As long as the system exists, humanity will not be truly free, but on the other hand, it is enough to see how it used this freedom at the beginning in such a way that it even began to need an compelling system.

Outside of the system, there are no living conditions because the system has taken everything: there is not one free thing independent of him. Human life does not arise outside the system (or at least it is very difficult to do so) because the means of life are inside the system. Living in the system costs you the system's money.

As a child leaves his parents to be independent, the same goes for the system – you cannot be dependent on it forever. When you have a problem, would you like to constantly ask the system for help or solve it yourself?

It seems that by leaving the system and setting up a hut or a cabin in the forest, living on one's own, a person would reduce the difficulty level that is becoming increasingly higher in the current system, and would not spend his strength on others, he would not have to financially maintain his property in the system (because for his property to simply exist, he must earn money), everything he would work for (without money, *which are the thief of the forces of his work*) would be his forever.

This is not a democracy – the Kingdom of God is coming whether you like it or not[37]. Just because everyone does it doesn't mean everyone is right, just because every each person does it does not mean it's good.

36 Genesis 6:11,12 (...) the earth was filled with violence (...)
37 Matthew 4:17 From that time on, Jesus began preaching and saying: "Repent, for the Kingdom of the heavens has drawn near"

Why fight the system?
To make it better.

So that there would be no harmful regulations – and these are in every system. Rules that make life easier for some people make it harder for others.

To live forever. When you live forever, you don't want to work forever like a machine that doesn't feel anything. You work and your job is never done. The work is never finished.

To resurrect those who have been defeated by the system. If any system cannot cope with the living, it will not be able to cope with those who would be resurrected.

Should we fight the system because it enslaves people?
It's not that slavery to the system is bad. In the past, as a slave, obedience to the master (or the state) ensured existence and allowed one to earn wealth or provided citizenship. Obtaining citizenship of another nation and obeying it opened up perspectives not seen anywhere else. There is also a reason for being a slave and the slave expects this result. But a slave does not want to be a slave forever. When the work is finished, there is no need to work on it anymore[38].

Unfortunately, for most people, fighting the system is impossible due to their wealth, prospects, family or social ties. For those who have a lot, have a lot to lose and don't want to waste it. Those who have nothing cannot say that and are free to act. When you lose everything, nothing restricts your movements – neither your material possessions nor your desires and dreams – when the attacker don't have a target that you have that he could attack, nothing will hurt you. Those who, with the help of Causality, see what are the final effects of the system and what is the end of its path, know that their lives and possessions in and through the system cannot last forever, they abandon it, they do not care, and they are also free from everything which restrains their actions. If your life is no different from that of a prisoner, then you are indeed a prisoner.

To change the world, you cannot go back, because there is nothing to go back to.

And these things don't matter to you. Like meaningless constructs – they have no effect on you. And you're ready to be whipped because it doesn't matter to you. You are ready to be beaten – it doesn't matter to you. You are willing to be killed rather than live in a world where you cannot live. These things are meaningless to you: you go through them to a destination that matters.

How to fight the system?
●Don't use money. While this is downright impossible for most people, it would hurt the system the most

> Jesus then said:
> „Pay back Caesar's things to Caesar, but God's things to God".
> And they were amazed at him.

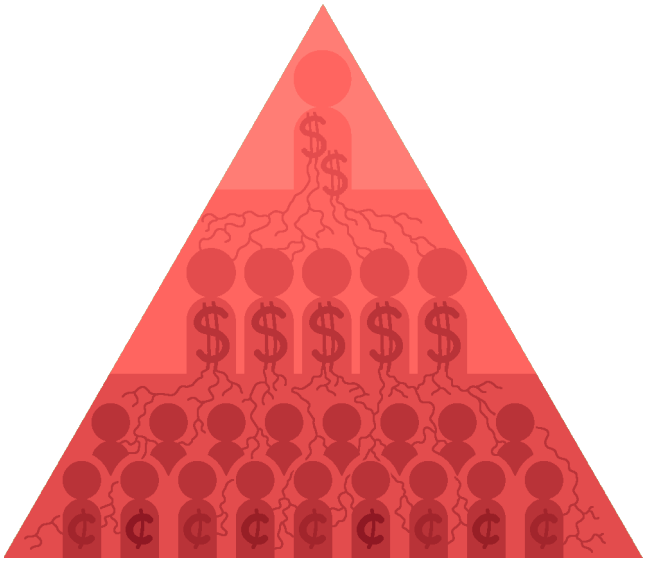
Mark 12:17 (BT) „give back" – NIV „render to" – KJV

It is known that the system takes a large part of the money from taxes, but the money itself is worthless. When you don't use money, you can't be bought with it, you are not charged taxes that the system uses to finance its services.

38 Genesis 2:1-2 Thus the heavens and the earth and everything in them were completed. And by the seventh day, God had completed the work that he had been doing, and he began to rest on the seventh day from all his work that he had been doing.
Luke 17:10 Likewise, when you have done all the things assigned to you , say: 'We are good-for-nothing slaves. What we have done is what we ought to have done'

How do you want to be as far away from the system as possible when you are using the system's money which are based on its rights?

When the broad masses do not use money, the system does not work and cannot distribute power through the bloodstream to organs, services and institutes, and organizations subordinate to it, and the body dies a natural death. If the lowest layer falls, all the others will also fall.



Giving up money means giving up dreams and desires, wants and aspirations that are fulfilled by money.

When a few people in a large group have an item and the rest do not, it is valuable. When everyone in a large group has this thing, that thing is not valuable. It happens that a few people in the group strive to make sure that there is not enough of this thing – that this thing is valuable and that only they have it. If everyone in the group has this thing, they do not work to have it, when they do not work, then part of their effort put into work cannot be transferred to others, for other purposes.

●Don't help the organization of the system. Especially those who are on the opposite side of God's commandments. Organizations whose organizers take from others, for themselves or for purposes that directly violate God's commandments. Secular and spiritual organizations.

●Don't spend your strength working for the system. The less you work, the more mental energy you have to fight the system.

●Fight it by purifying and whitening it with the truth, and refuting the lies until the end. Then systems and teachings based on lies will collapse. Seek the truth even at the cost of your own humiliation rather than stick to a lie to save your own pride

How do you want to prove the corruption and evil of the system if you don't let it work on you? If you defend yourself against it or run away from it? An effect cannot occur if one does not allow the causes to act on him. When innocent people die at the hands of the system, they become victims who prove that the system that condemns them is bad. That's what Jesus did[39]. This is what happened during the burnt offering (Greek: *Holokaustos*) in the 40's by a system that has been judged and will never rise from the ashes. Without human proof that the system is wrong, the system cannot be judged. Systems are created for the good of humans, so when a system does harm to humans, such systems die. Human sacrifice is necessary to prove the evil of the system. If there is a limited number of ideas, teachings, or governments that must be proven evil, then the number of human sacrifices is also limited. They must be proven to believe – even the heavenly beings had their doubts[40] dispelled by evidence of the highest value.

If the reason why the system exists is us, bad people, then the fight with the system is actually fight with ourselves.

If you are putting yourself in danger as you fight the system, do not expect the system and its related organizations or institutions to help you.

You can't beat the system when you are in the system.

The system will disappear when will fulfill its mission, will be proved to be bad or will be replaced by another system.

A body without a spirit is only dust – similarly, empires and kingdoms built on teachings and lofty ideas fall when the ideas in their people fall – then the once great kingdoms became only an empire of ash and cinder. When we cut ourselves off from an idea, we throw its creator into the abyss of inaction.

When the light of guidance of the systems that were high up for humans to see, that illuminated the path for humanity to walk, dims, then there will be dark times for the world again – until they return to Causality.

One of the most important things to realize is that the system is negatively disposed to all ideas that are opposed to it. Many times, the systems of various governments simply killed people who had the opposite values[41]. Fighting the world will make you lose everything you have in it. Both systems cannot coexist – God's and this world's.

Jesus was homeless during the final period of his life.

> Now as they were going along the road, someone said to him:
> „I will follow you wherever you go”.
> But Jesus said to him:
> „Foxes have dens and birds of heaven have nests, but the Son of man has to nowhere to lay down his head”.

Luke 9:57,58

Many considered him mentally ill.

> But when his relatives heard about it, they went out to seize him, for they were saying:
> „He has gone out of his mind”.

Mark 3:21

39 John 12:31 Now there is a judging of this world; now the ruler of this world will be cast out.
40 Job 2:5 (...) strike his bone and flesh, and he will surely curse you to your very face.
41 For example see the protests at the Tiananmen Square (1989)

> Many of them were saying:
> „He has a demon and is out of his mind. Why do you listen to him?”

John 10:20

He was wanted like a criminal.

> After this Jesus continued travelling about in Galilee for he did not want to do so in Judea because the Jews were seeking to kill him.

John 7:1; see also John 11:54

> So the Jews began looking for him at the festival and saying:
> „Where is that man?”

John 7:11, see also John 7:7,10,13

> But the chief priests and the Pharisees had given orders that if anyone got to know where Jesus was, he should report it, so that they could seize him.

John 11:57

> If the world hates you, you know that it has hated me before it hated you.

John 15:18

Should you submit to a system that imprisons and kills good people?

> (...) No one comes to the Father except through me.

John 14:6

- through his pain and experiences.

> (...) „Take, eat. This means my body” (...)
> „Drink out of it, all of you, for this means blood of the covenant, which is to be poured out in behalf of many for forgiveness of sins.”

Matthew 26:26-28

Those who currently adhere to this the most are Jehovah's Witnesses because there is probably no other religion that would expose itself to such blows through the flesh and down to the blood. These are certainly not Christian "shepherds" who take refuge in their cathedrals, wrapped in their robes, while they adore these symbols of flesh and blood, forgetting to act according to their meaning.

After that, you also need to realize that you cannot build a better system based on the existing one. You have to get rid of bad things first if you want to create better things, because both cannot coexist at the same time. It will be possible to build when there will be no destroyers. Killing a man does not kill the idea that drives him. When you kill a man with this idea, another will arise in his place guided by this idea. Kill an idea and a person guided by it will never arise again. Therefore, we do not struggle with the physical body but with the beliefs, teachings and ideas that guide it[42].

At the very beginning, you don’t know how to do this, there is only your will. Water cuts rock not by its strength but by its persistence.

The body alone cannot fight and defeat the system. The spirit of man can. If it doesn't exist, it needs to be created. Causality creates the human mind. A mind full of truth that can overcome systems based on lies.

42 Ephesians 6:12 because we have a struggle, not against blood and flesh, but against the governments, against the authorities, against the world rulers of this darkness, against the wicked spirit forces in the heavenly places.

Today's people wonder why they should follow the resolutions, declarations, constitutions and treaties that were concluded hundreds of years ago when those who signed them are long dead? These declarations were "signed" (by the hands of representatives of ideas), created by ideas (and therefore by the nations that follow them), and therefore people guided by these ideas are obliged to follow them today. If you are part of it – you must follow it.

Which nation by itself has abandoned its constitution, its laws and traditions, and gave up its pride, honor and dignity to be part of another, better country and to live better under its rule and under its name?

> How often our bourgeoisie rises in moral indignation when he hears from the mouth of a tramp that he does not care whether he is German or not, as long as his livehood is assured. The rich people then protest immediately and pretend to be horrified by such ideas.

- Adolf Hitler *Mein Kampf* Chapter II: Years of Study and Suffering in Vienna

I do not defend the country where I live against the invaders of war because I want the country's system to collapse. Does war come to a country against its inhabitants or against their ideas and the system that shapes and directs these inhabitants? The war comes against the system, not against ordinary people. If the war came for ordinary Smiths, the enemies would immediately drop nukes. Let's see how many will defend this system of their own will. Whether it's a holy crusade or political skirmishes – don't involve me in it. When no one goes to war, there is no war. Why would I put on a uniform, reach for a gun and save the world in a system I don't care about? Therefore, let the system perish, not the people – unless the system is in their hearts.

What we are supposed to pray for[43] – the Kingdom of God – it does not exist on earth at the moment, but thanks to people who want change, a better world is just beginning to be created.

Candidates for government have their own electoral programs – it is no different here. The program of the Kingdom of God are all the laws and teachings given by Jesus two thousand years ago, thanks to them the foundation stone for a new, better world will be laid.

- Putting first, fear and love for the Causality with all your heart, soul, mind and strength;
- Not using money. Food, as well as other things necessary for the life of a corporeal man, for free – farmers work for crops, not for money;
- Destroying evil: you cannot build good on the foundations of evil, you can't build good when evil exists because the two conflict with each other; purifying lies with truth which in turn will create a greater contrast between good and evil – the final division; destroying systems that are in contradiction with the Kingdom of God by proving that they are evil.
- Rectifying the effects of evil: physically repairing the planet from ecological effects, war effects and other;
- Building good;
- Peace – how can you pray for a peaceful Kingdom of God if you go to war on either side? Members of the Kingdom of God do not act like other nations: they do not attack with violence, they do not defend themselves with violence;
- We are fighting for conditions on Earth, both for the body and the mind, both for the living and for the dead who are to be resurrected.

There are laws thanks to which private property exists, there are laws thanks to which friendship, love and life exist. When these laws are not respected, when people sin against these commandments, there is no property, no friendship, no trust, no love and no life.

43 Matthew 6:10 "Let your Kingdom come. Let your will take place, as in heaven, also on earth."

The Kingdom of God will come when the system does not kill or enslave people like Jesus.

The Kingdom of God is an independent kingdom – it is not subject to other nations nor does it bend the knee to their systems and evil. It is independent – what is not dependent to other nations is the immaterial mind of a member of the Kingdom of God – because the bases and foundations of this kingdom are not material either and because these true foundations are not subject to lies nor stand on them. Independence only makes sense when one can survive and live independently of the means of living of others – Jesus is proof of this – a member of the Kingdom of God independent of others.

Just as humans tame and domesticate animals, and make their lives dependent on them, so the system does to humans.

It has happened many times that the rulers and leaders of kingdoms and nations of the system were more competent and professional than those who claim to be spiritual leaders or servants of god.

To bake a cake from scratch, you first need to create the Earth. It is similar with the Kingdom of God – its members must appear first. And unshakable foundations are necessary to build everything else on.

The government, whether of the present nations or the Kingdom of God, has nothing and therefore cannot give you anything. The government governs people and resources, just as an invisible code governs the body to develop – everything on Earth has been subjected to people. But the Kingdom of God is a government that does not force anyone to do anything.

“Aren't these requirements too high?” When you take your driving test, the examiner does not reduce the requirements, otherwise an accident will definitely happen. No one reduces the requirements that help a child start walking, he must meet all of them himself. Otherwise, he will ride in a stroller driven by someone else, forever. Putting most of the puzzle pieces together is not enough to get the full picture. Do not minimize the conditions to obtain an absolute effect – because without causes there are no effects.

The longer you live in the world, the longer you live in the system, the longer you obey its laws, prohibitions, orders – either you get used to it and live to death, or you rebel and refuse to live according to such laws.

What to do with bad people? With murderers, criminals, rapists, violence? Should we do with them what the current system does with them? What to do with evil?

The first thing to do is ask the question: why is it like this, why do they doing it? What's the cause? And this cause must be eliminated.

The reason why a person does an evil act is his desire for something. And man pursues this desire by the wrong path because the result of following the bad path is its bad consequences. He may be lied to by someone that this bad path is the right one, or he chooses it himself when he sees no other path leading to his goal. If this new desire cannot be fulfilled by following the path of good, then this desire can be acquired at the end of the path of evil. Therefore, “do not lead us into temptation” of desires that can only be obtained by walking on the path of evil and finding the fulfillment of these desires at the end of this evil path. The cause of evil deeds is not ignorance, low IQ, physical structure, gender, skin color – because all of this is also in the animal world and nature cannot be evil. The evil that surrounds a person is not the cause that makes that person evil.

The problem of evil. Everything Causality does is good because it all follows the chain of Causality – cause produces proportional effect – eternally. Evil is created when a person does not listen to Causality. The reason why a person does not listen to Causality is the person's own desires. These desires cannot be aroused by Causality but are planted by someone else – because desires must also have a cause. When a person does not listen to God, Causality, then the person's actions are evil – and evil cannot follow the chain of Causality eternally – at some point the cause will not produce the effect.

A person commits an evil act when he acts contrary to what Causality tells him – no animal can talk to Causality, so no animal can act contrary to what Causality tells him, so no animal or plant can commit evil. What Causality tells a person, its word, is meant to direct a person to fulfill his desires – when a person does not listen to Causality by committing an evil act, then his desire is not fulfilled, he misses the goal of his desire.

A person becomes evil when he does evil. Man commits evil when he reaches for his desire forbidden by Causality. To stop doing this evil, he must give up what he wants. When you have a desire that is forbidden by God, not given by Causality, then you can know that this desire has been planted by someone else.

Desires appear in man that were not given by Causality, this causes man to have no possibility to fulfill his desires, man does not abandon these desires (which manifests itself through anger, frustration), this leads to bad deeds (which strive to fulfill these desires in a bad way), this causes man to become bad.

Guilt and punishment, cause and effect, act and consequence. What is the cause? Who is to blame? What is the source? A knife without consciousness is not guilty of murder. For millions of years, animals with consciousness (but not at the level of human consciousness that can see more than animals, the future) were not guilty of the effects of their programmed actions. Only the mind with the awareness of the consequences, the effect, that is, the mind that can talk to Causality, when it decides something knowing the effect and commits this act – then it is the source of the effect. The cause is guilty of the effect: when this cause is not in the mind of man (consciousness that can talk to Causality), then this mind is not guilty of the effect.

Cause:

> Because you listened to your wife's voice

Consciousness of effect given by Causality:

> and ate from the tree concerning which I gave you this command, 'You must not eat from it,'

Effect:

> cursed is the ground on your account (...)

Genesis 3:17

When is a person guilty of an act? When is he the cause of this behavior?
When no causes affects on this person, when Causality leaves him without telling him anything and leaving everything to his will.

You are the cause when:

#1 Causality speaks to you (commandments, warnings, orders) and you do not listen to it. Such behavior of a person is always dictated by his desire which was sown by someone else. Man is always conscious when Causality says something to him, so man is always conscious of the consequences of his actions when he rejects the word of Causality, the act of this behavior is conscious because without the awareness of this act it is impossible to reject what Causality says. Then a person does not listen to Causality because he chooses his own desire;

#2 Causality has nothing to say to you. This happens when you have done everything that Causality has told you, then God has nothing more to say to you – leaving the action in your hands. Then man does not listen to Causality – because there is nothing more to listen to.

The actions of all animals are not their fault because they cannot converse with Causality and thus oppose it. Animals and plants are always subject to Causality, so the cause of their actions is never themselves – so the actions that happen through them are not their fault. That, which is merely material (plants), cannot oppose the cause that acts on it, cannot be the origin of a separate cause of its actions. That, which is material and has a mind that cannot converse with Causality, cannot be the origin of a separate cause of its actions. He, who is material and has a mind that can converse with Causality, can be the origin of a separate cause of his actions when he performs an action whose cause is not anything outside that mind – then that mind is the cause of his actions and is guilty of them.

Can someone be lied to when he has previously received truth from Causality? Can a lie be placed in someone when there is truth told and placed by Causality inside him? You cannot lie to a person who has received truth from God because what Causality says is accepted with complete faith that it will come true, but you can sow a desire in him and then bribe him with the fulfillment of this desire. The return to unconscious lie is impossible.

A person is guilty of his act only when he acts against the code that Causality has put into him or when Causality does not act on him.

- this code given by God is in the mind of this person. This code can be information, a commandment or a warning about something that should not be done so as not to receive bad consequences.

When a man knows the truth from God and when he does not listen to Causality, and when he acts against what Causality has told him – then this act of his, his deed, is his fault.

A man is guilty of his actions only when he is the cause of those actions. To be guilty of an act = to be the cause of this act. Because the cause that created man and that put into man the program that man follows and according to which man acts and performs actions, existed before this man – therefore man is guilty of his action only when man acts against this cause or when this cause no longer affects him – thus making him the only isolated source of the causes of his effects.

Is a person guilty of their actions when they know what will happen and still do them? Not necessarily – because, seeing no other way out, they may even be forced to do them. The darkness of lies makes it impossible for a person to see through them any other way out.

A man is not guilty of any act that is performed *through him* and not by him.

A man is guilty of his act when he does something that is contrary to the word of Causality – but there is always a cause for this too.

> At that he said: "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree from which I commanded you not to eat?"

Genesis 3:11

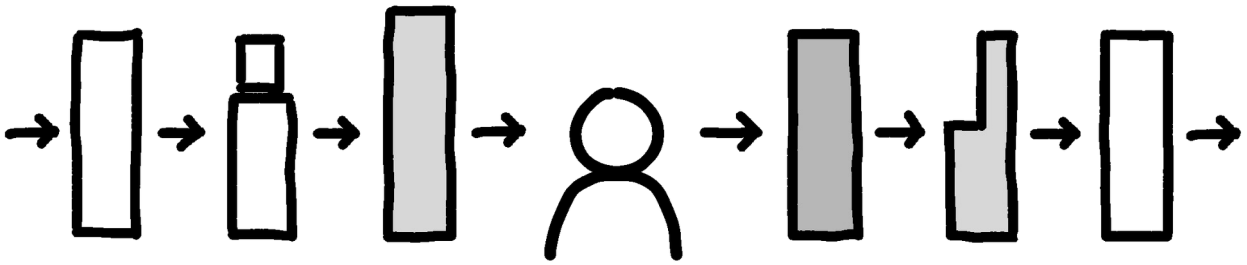
> Then the Lord God said to the woman, “What is this you have done?”
> The woman said, “The serpent deceived me, and I ate.”

Genesis 3:13 (KJV)

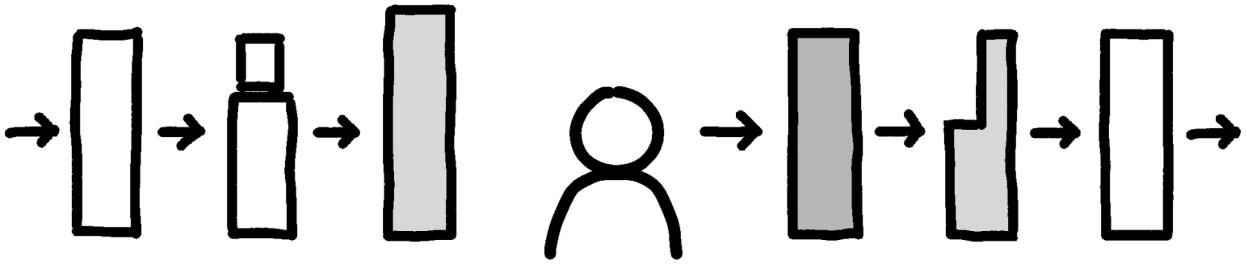
Two types of source of causes can be distinguished:

#1 Causality that has existed since eternity is “guilty” of the laws of physics and the functioning of the nature it created;

#2 Persons are guilty of their actions when they do not listen to Causality, then that person is the cause of his actions because that person is no longer driven by Causality.



A person is not guilty of his actions when things are done through him.



A person is guilty of his actions because he is the cause of them.

Something or someone receives a consequence of its actions in proportion to its causes.

The fault can only lie with the one who knows the truth. The fault never lies with the one who is in a lie. By telling people the truth (and proving it so that they believe it) the lie is destroyed – then the fault can only lie with them now.

Where did evil come from if everything was created good? How can someone refuse to walk in God's path if he was created on that path? Evil can only come from a person who has the ability to talk to Causality, from a person who can predict events. The source of evil is from a place that is beyond the power of Causality. Outside the area of its rule. The source of evil is beyond the material world – it can only be born in the immaterial mind of a person. Evil cannot come from that which is subject to Causality, from animals, plants.

The area that was the mind of the first people was affected by Causality. How can the area be beyond the control of Causality? How can the area that is the immaterial mind of a person be beyond the influence of Causality? When Causality leaves and there is no longer a "why". Many people seek this "why" so that Causality will push them to action, being thus under the control of God who gives the power to do so.

Many people unconsciously choose the wrong path because they have been lied to. It's the same with a programmed robot – no one blames it for its actions. Similarly, such a person is programmed with lies. Through the person being lied to, the actions of the liar occur. When conscious forces an unconscious to do something, then unconscious is not responsible for the effect of this act, the conscious one is responsible. Some people are unaware. Things without consciousness are treated as things without consciousness – decisions are made for them, they are governed. Since the raw material (money) from which the fulfillment of desires is forged must be limited in this system, not everyone can fulfill their desires with money – that is why they look for other ways that lead through the wrong path.

Many people consciously do evil even though they know what is right. Most of them then cover their mind's eyes, their consciousness, to suppress their consciousness when they commit this evil. There can be many reasons: fear for their own future, for their own life, the future of their own children, career, property and wealth, generally: for their own desires – because the fulfillment of these desires depends on submission and obedience to the evil system. Once a person suppresses his consciousness, he becomes a robot without consciousness, a cog in the machine of the system.

Someone conscious pushes an unconscious domino, and that pushes another, and that knocks down another, and another... A body falls and kills another body. It's hard to blame a body pushed by someone else.

He, who is blindfolded, is not guilty of his steps (and therefore of the path he is walking on).

Throughout all these millennia, it was simply inevitable that people would sin and do evil. That man would commit evil was almost foretold. So, should one be blamed for behavior that has its established causes and thus – a certain effect?

> When I bring them to the land that I have sworn about to their forefathers – one flowing with milk and honey – and they eat their fill and prosper, they will turn to other gods and serve them and treat me with disrespect and break my covenant. When many calamities and distresses come upon them, this song will serve as a witness to them (for their descendants should not forget it), for I already know the inclination that they have developed even before I bring them into the land about which I have sworn.

Deuteronomy 31:20-21

For their children, what advice do peaceful Christian parents have who shun evil and who turn the other cheek when their offspring will be attacked by evil? Why did they produce these offspring in the first place in bad circumstances where evil is coming to their children? Will they turn to the imperfect system[44] that Jesus fought against?

Fulfilling one's desire is like tasting the fruit previously picked from the garden – but no one will fulfill their desires if no one takes care of the garden. Then the anger and evil in a man full of unquenchable desires boils over.

Some people, instead of a long and good path to picking off their desires, choose a shorter and bad one because they believe that life is short and no one can live forever.

---

44 Romans 13:2 — Let every person be in subjection to the superior authorities, for there is no authority except by God; the existing authorities stand placed in their relative positions by God. Therefore, whoever opposes the authority has taken a stand against the arrangement of God; those who have taken a stand against it will bring judgment against themselves.
Matthew 22:21 — (...) Pay back, therefore, Caesar's things to Caesar (...)
Titus 3:1 — Continue reminding them to be in subjection and to be obedient to governments and authorities (...)
1 Peter 2:13-14 — For the Lord's sake subject yourself to every human creation, whether to a king as being superior or to governors as sent by him to punish wrongdoers but to praise those who do good.

When a person does not believe that he can live forever, by doing evil he can more quickly achieve his desires which he fulfills during his short life. A person lives forever because he has faith that he can live forever, the faith that he can live forever is achieved only when he has good conditions of mind (which in turn create good conditions around him), which can only be achieved when he does good. Not: because man does not live forever, he does evil, but: man does not live forever because he does evil.

The system forces people to do evil – because there is not enough for everyone – because the amount of system money must be limited in order for it to have value. And people see no other path to their desires except through the wrong path, because other paths have been blocked by the system or it is impossible for the system itself to open these paths.

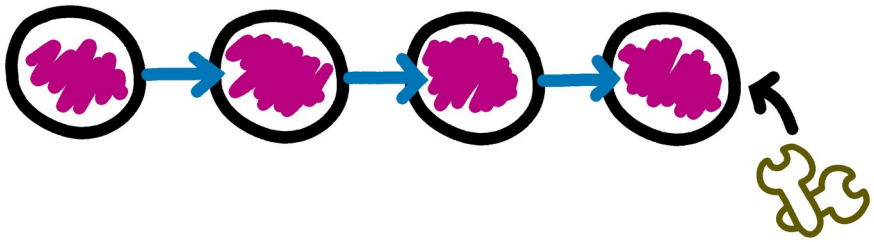
Man gives in and does evil because of the system ⇄ Systems are created (and establish laws and regulations) because of people who do evil.

It is impossible to be part of the system and not to do bad things.

People pursue their desires and dreams, sometimes by stealing, killing and doing evil. But no one does evil when he has no desires. Life without fulfilling wishes and desires and without dreams coming true can be compared simply to existence. There was no belief in the existence of another path to these desires.

Quarrels and wars are about wealth and resources. “If we make resources infinite, we will make wars obsolete.” No nation fights another nation for its money. No one will want to take part in a war from which they will gain nothing, in a skirmish that will not result in the fulfillment of their desires.

When you want to solve an evil or a problem and you fail, or the problem returns after some time, it may mean that the real problem is the one that causes the problem you solved. When you have solved the problem and it no longer occurs, it means that you have solved the cause of all these causes, the problem is solved forever.



The problem you were trying to fix will not go away, as long as there is a cause that is causing it.

In the fight against evil, don't fight the domino that's falling on you, fight the force that pushed it.

Where does evil and lies come from when everyone is born good? It can be there in no other way than being let in from the outside. Such an event occurred in the Garden of Eden. Dealing with evil people is pointless if there is still a reason that makes a person do evil – because a person is not born evil. Only what is put into me comes out. In this way, man is saturated with evil from his very youth[45].

45 Genesis 8:21 (...) inclination of the heart of a man is bad from his youth up (...)

When there are desires in man not raised by God and when the system in which man lives cannot satisfy them, then man goes down the wrong path to fulfill them and commits evil. Man is not born evil. Man's nature is not evil. Today's newly conceived newborn has as much in mind as the first man when he was just created – it is not the inside of man that is evil, but what is outside – in this way external evil can find its way inside man.

Should they be dealt with in the same way as the system does it? The system uses various means for this: police, prison, etc. It solves force with force. Systems of nations use armed forces and services. So should we deal with evil this way? No. Evil destroys itself, always, after some time. Evil that lasts forever is not evil because no evil lasts forever. For good to remain in the world, evil must die – in you or with you. Evil must be allowed to die. Evil cannot be helped. There is no arguing with evil because evil that wants to remain evil will not listen to the truth. As long as evil exists, good cannot exist alongside it, therefore evil must die.

Evil cannot be helped. Jesus said "No!" more times than "Yes" when someone wanted something from him[46]. He did not come to fulfill the will of men, the will of angels, or even his own, but the will of Causality.

> If a society needs a large, powerful law enforcement establishment, then there is something gravely wrong with that society.
>
> Theodore Kaczynski *Industrial Society and Its Future*, §147 (1995)

Without forgiveness – because forgiveness is when there is death, death not of the body but of the mind. "The wages of sin is death" – and only death – of a bad man, his mind and therefore – his evil deeds.

Forgiveness should occur when the consequences of a wrongdoing, no matter how great, are repaired. Forgiveness when the consequences of a bad act have not been repaired is simply coming to terms with the evil and the loss it has brought. Descendants pay for the wrongs caused by their predecessors even though they themselves did not cause them, or receive compensation for the evil that befell on their ancestors, but they did not experience them themselves – this is not justice.

Forgiveness is not caring about the evil done by the evil one, the evil that befell the person who cared about the evil that befell him but now doesn't care about it. The person doesn't care about this evil when #1 this evil deed has been paid off, fixed, #2 the evil person who did this evil act doesn't exist (through death or repentance) so he can no longer commit evil.

Forgiveness of deeds, wrongs, occurs when these wrongs are not remembered. These harms are not remembered when the wound after them no longer hurts and does not make itself felt so that it is remembered every day. A bleeding wound received years ago, which fully healed, is forgotten.

Forgiveness itself is the letting go of someone's sins – nothing more – it is not friendship, covenant or love. When you forgive, the reputation balance of the person you forgive goes from negative to zero, not positive – which is obtained by doing good.

Forgiveness is not necessarily forgetting – he who forgets is forced to repeat what he has forgotten.

Forgiveness should not occur when there is still a cause (or cause of cause etc.) that does evil. Will you forgive someone who wants to do evil and never abandons it?

What prevented Judas from receiving forgiveness from Jesus? Because the deeds of Jesus on Earth were not the deeds of Jesus, but of God – because Causality acted through Jesus, not Jesus by himself. To do evil to a servant is a sin against the master of that servant – that sin the servant cannot forgive. When you have sinned against the master, then the messenger of the master by himself cannot forgive it.

46 Luke 12:13-14; Matthew 15:23

He, on whom this forgiveness does not depend, cannot forgive. He, against whom no sin has been committed, cannot forgive.

What prevented Satan from being forgiven for his actions? It was the lack of repentance. The lack of repentance of the desire that caused those actions. The desire did not pass away – so the torment of not fulfilling that desire remained, eternally.

Who can be forgiven for their deed and who can't? Forgiveness is caused by undoing the effects of a bad deed (sin). Not everyone who wants forgiveness can get it because they can't afford it – cannot afford it because the price is the abandonment of a precious desire that one does not want to give up and which was the reason that caused the act.

The desire for something is the cause of an action that fulfills that desire – when the desire is abandoned then the action that was born from that desire can be forgiven.

When you believe that you are abandoning your desire – then you believe that your action will not appear – an action aimed at fulfilling the desire – then you believe that you will not receive bad effect from Causality for your action, that bad consequence will not come – thus your faith has saved you – from the evil consequence of your actions and from the suffering that they bring. Therefore, he who deceives himself cannot receive forgiveness from Causality – because then the faith that saves man does not appear.

He who does not regret his actions does not receive forgiveness.

Forgiveness from Causality of your evil deed is when the consequence of your deed does not appear – this can only be achieved when you destroy the cause of that deed – desire.

Sometimes a person seeks forgiveness for their actions that were caused by desires inspired by God – the person has been lied to that fulfilling these desires is wrong. Often, striving for forgiveness for these actions, he works hard or even becomes a slave.

Does God want sacrifice so that man can receive forgiveness? Whether to make a sacrifice of abandoning desire – that depends only on man.

He, who is strong, and to whom a lot of evil, wounds and blows are done, and who is able to bear it so that they are of no importance to him, who is even insensitive to these blows, does not have to forgive (and does not even blame the person doing the evil), because he has nothing to forgive.

An animal kills an animal but no one in heaven says to them: "do not kill". A man kills a man and yet it is written: "do not kill". Why is killing permissible in the animal world but condemned in the human world? After all, some animals that are killed also have some feelings and emotions similar to humans (some animals even have feelings stronger than humans because they live in the "here and now" which results in an immediate reaction to stimuli in the form of, for example, emotions). People were commanded not to kill another human because #1 the killer then has remorse[47] that an animal that kills to simply survive does not have because their killing of other animals is part of their programmed nature; #2 one of the programmed goals of a material human is the desire to interact (learn about the unknown) with other people (because other people are not the same as animals because the diversity and otherness of people comes from the immaterial mind, something that cannot be found in material animals) so killing other people destroys this goal and then this part of the programmed code is not executed.

47 Genesis 4:8-16 (...) At this Cain said to Jehovah: "The punishment for my error is too great to bear". (...)

He (whether an animal or a human) who has a reason to kill and has no remorse, is not subject to the commandment "thou shalt not kill", even if his victim, whose life he does not care about, wants to live – an animal that kills an animal will have the consequences of killing the animal, a human that kills a human will have the consequences of killing a human – but in the case of an animal, the consequences of killing are different than in the case of a human who kills – whatever these consequences are.

Similarly, there are other commandments that neither animals nor plants have to obey because they do not have desires that would be fulfilled by obeying them – that is why in the world of fauna and flora there are killings (for food, to defend territory, to fight for a mate), various forms of sexual behavior (which, when manifested by humans, other people may perceive as debauched immoral deviations), thefts (in the animal world there is a concept of private property, it can be, for example, eggs, nest or an entire territory) and even lies.

- all these behaviors are good because they do not interfere with desires that these creatures do not have and which would be fulfilled by following the commandments. Animals do not have these commandments because they do not have desires to which these commandments would lead them.

Evil must die. You can't live in bad conditions. Bad conditions are caused by bad people. The causes that makes people to become evil are the actions of systems (governmental and religious), false ideas, teachings and beliefs. The cause that causes people to become evil is not of themselves, because man was created perfect, everything was created "very good".

A lie never occurs naturally in nature or in the human mind but can only be sown by another person – that's why we are fighting not with the evil people who have been misled but against those who have sown these lies. In a fight against an opponent who is an immaterial mind (and therefore a lie or idea which are immaterial), the material body cannot do any harm to him.

Should we kill bad people? No. Every person belongs to God. As long as both bad and good people exist on Earth, Causality rules over them – so they belong to Causality. Man's sin against the holy spirit causes this person to seek death themselves, not wanting to belong to Causality and be on Earth – the area that Causality rules (as it was with Judas). Fulfillment of the prophecy about the defeat of Satan is impossible if people kill people who commit evil.

~~Don't blame the players, blame the game~~. Most people act this way because they do not believe that it can be otherwise. When no one plays the game, the game ends. The rules of the game fall apart. When no one obeys the law, the law falls and the governments and nations that follow it fall. As long as players play – the game continues – blame the players – but should you blame those who don't believe they can change the rules of the game? For the effect, it's cause should be blamed, because the cause always makes the effect, just as a domino piece makes the next one to fall – but sometimes for the effect must be blamed its primary cause, just as a domino falls because of another domino piece located a million domino blocks behind it. If I am not the cause of the actions that are performed *through* me, then I am not responsible for these actions, whether good or bad they are. Therefore, "do not kill" – because the cause that created this evil will create it again. Prove the evil of this cause, and people guided by it will never arise again.

Killing an evil man will cause one evil man to die but the cause that created him will still exist. Repentance, conversion and change of an evil man will cause the evil in man to die and the cause that created this evil will cease to exist, the evil cause will be judged, whatever it is: religion, system, science, faith, idea or even desire.

What is the difference between unconsciously killing a person and consciously killing a person? After all, the result – the death of a person – is the same in both cases. The difference is that in consciously killing a person, the killer has his own motive, cause for killing. It is impossible to resurrect the killed person if this cause still exists, because if he were resurrected, this cause would again drive the killer to kill.

Something happens (not *because* of something/someone, but) *through* someone when that someone is unaware, unconsciouss. God caused good through Jesus (who also did not know everything), but this good did not happen of his own will. The system, through unaware people who do not fully know how it works, causes evil. You can't blame some people for their evil – just as you can't blame Jesus for the good that God did.

Biological activities, bodily activities, activities that are not caused directly by man, natural activities driven by sexual drive, fear, defense, the desire for justice, love – some of these activities are performed through man and not by man – so man cannot be guilty of them.

Because of bad people, bad systems, wars – because of this, you have no prospects for the future, so you don't build it, you don't look for a house, possessions, offspring because all this will be consumed by this evil. Why try when it will fail due to the fault of others? Therefore, first, the evil cause must be removed, which prevents good things from existing. When the future is threatened, you don't build it – you remove the threat.

A fish lives in an ecosystem, in a system that was created for it. A bird lives in its system. A bear, a lion live in their respective natural systems. The ocean, the sky and the treetops, the jungle, the savannah are natural systems. Each of them is characterized by its own properties and has its own unique laws. If an animal had the opportunity to break the law of the system for which it was created, it would die from that system. It is similar with people – but for them, not the material system of nature itself was created, but also immaterial systems: ideas, laws, religions. These immaterial systems were created specifically to satisfy the desires of the human mind – desires that no animal has. Similarly to these of animals – human systems are many because there are many different societies and groups and they have different desires and aspirations that are sometimes opposed to each other.

As fish swim and breathe in water, so people swim and breathe the air of the system. These breaths of this air build (the mind) of the man of the system: they make him use the language of the nation, use the money of the system, practice religion, recognize different moral values. Some people breathe air, other people breathe different air. A man who is in the system performs an act that is a sin against this system – another man who lives in a different system performs exactly the same act as that one, but this act is not in any way a transgression against the system in which he lives. The first man is burdened with the weight of guilt, while the second has none. In this way, for the first man, the system generates debt and burdens him with the guilt for the act, a burden under which his shoulders bend, which in another system is nothing. System recognizes him as the bad one.

The actions and the very manner of Adam and Eve, when they lived in Eden, the first system created for them, were neither sinful nor improper or wrong, but if the same way of life and actions were to be performed by someone in the present system, the system would consider them improper or even wrong.

Force can be overwhelmed only by the greater force. Physical force overcomes physical strength, but also mental strength overcomes another force of mind, human spirit. And it is the human psyche that governs the physical strength of physical muscles, and these control the weapon, not the other way.

Because should a good person learn what it's like to be bad, or should a bad person learn how to do good? How can a righteous person understand and empathize with a wicked person if he has never been one? Should he become one to find out? That's why there is this gap between these two and it keeps getting wider. It *must* exist; it *should* exist. Massively, like in a factory – manufacturing consent to evil, don't let it be you as a product. Should not the good do good that displeases the evil? Without final division, pure good that is separated from evil and lies cannot come.

A person can be able to empathize with another person; a good person should not be able to empathize with a bad person.

Moreover, this gap, this division does not exist by material, physical attributes: gender, figure or skin color, people are divided by intangible attributes: beliefs, ideas, values that are visible in their behavior and practices. A true science or idea never compromises with false wisdom because truth does not agree with lies.

It is often said to look your interlocutor in the eye as a sign of respect, but it's difficult to look the evil, that is repulsive, in the face, because there is no respect for evil. Man closes himself against evil, he does not open up.

But turning his back, he said to Peter: "Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me, because you think, not God's thoughts, but those of men."	But when Michael the archangel had a difference with the Devil and was disputing about Moses' body, he did not dare to bring a judgment against him in abusive terms, but said: "May Jehovah rebuke you."
Matthew 16:23	Jude 9

Not every human is your neighbor[48]. While your neighbor's material body may be the same as yours, his immaterial ideas, teachings and purposes may be opposed to you and be contrary to the truth that is the word of God. This is one of the reasons why tolerance towards everything is not appropriate. There is something not right when representatives of one idea boldly shake hands with representatives of the opposite idea. You may often hear to be more tolerant; I am surrounded by evil – should I open up to it? Sometimes there are no conversations, negotiations, settlements or compromises because good does not compromise with evil, truth has nothing to do with lies, $0 \neq 1$, should what is right compromise with what is wicked? You can't be polite towards evil, you are not obedient towards evil, you are disobedient towards evil. Tolerance must also have its cause. When an equation, an idea, a science is proven, there is no more research, talk or discussion because there is nothing to discuss – everything has been proven – all that is left is action.

Bad people try to convince good people of their reasons – but falsehood cannot overcome truth – they talk to a wall that cannot be moved. When someone tries to convince with falsehood someone who knows the truth – it is as if someone took air in their hand and threw it at a wall.

Should you endure in silence when someone wrongs you? Many people suppress the cry of pain from blows, thinking that it is a "sign of weakness" or that it would hurt the evil one, or because Jesus commanded to turn the other cheek and did not open his mouth when he was harmed. It is certain that if you do not let know that something is not right, then that something will never cease to exist. Jesus made it known loudly that something was not right for him.

48 Luke 10:29-37 "Who really is my neighbor?"

Many refrain from doing good or speaking the truth because it would affect the psyche and hurt the emotions of bad people. But without this hurt, there will be no end to evil, no possible repentance of the bad and turning away from evil. Many also refrain from the cry of the wronged good because then the mind of the bad person who has done evil to the good person would find itself in a place of torment of remorse, a place from which he himself would not be able to get out because he himself is not able to repair the evil he has done. It is easier for the bad person to do evil when he attacks an insensitive stone without feelings.

If I, by speaking the truth, offend others, it is not I who am against them, but God whose word is the truth, that I speak.

> (...) "Teacher, in saying these things, you insult us also."
>
> Luke 11:37-45

The strongest, healthiest and most adapted individuals will survive in nature. The Nazis cared about the purity of the race in physical, corporeal and mental, ideological and immaterial terms. There are nations that do not allow migrants and refugees into their borders not because of their physical structure, appearance or skin color, but precisely because of their ideas, beliefs, behavior and culture, bad, untrue and harmful teachings, religions that deviate from the truth and which are visible in behavior of newcomers, and which would make this country go back hundreds of years with its beliefs – and therefore – with progress. The intruder is not the material body but what is immaterial.

> (...) he showed me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God
>
> But anything defiled and anyone who does what is disgusting and deceitful will in no way enter into it; only those written in the Lamb's scroll of life will enter.
>
> Revelation 21:10, 27

Does this mean that the innocent will suffer because of evil people as long as they exist? Yes. Because the religion of peace cannot defend itself with the tools of violence. It is not unusual that for centuries brutal evil has been killing peaceful good. The only thing you can do is: overcome evil with good[49] or wait for evil to annihilate itself.

It is worth noting that a religious system like Catholicism has no means of defense against such evil. Religion (or at least those religions of peace) relies on the system of the nation in which it lives to solve this problem. And this system protects it, protecting the subjects of religion, by its means and methods. In the fight against evil (or even in defense against it), will you use the tools of war to bring peace? In the fight against evil, one cannot become evil.

Those who want and believe that all this can be achieved, vow to do everything – even sacrifice their lives if necessary, to reliably create the conditions necessary for eternal life. Want to help? Start with yourself.

Many good people do not do good for fear of evildoers – and good does not come. Much evil has happened that could have been avoided if the good ones had been firm.

Instead of repairing the effects of evil, it is necessary to ensure that this evil does not arise at all – using Causality that predicts and warns. There will be no need for a sacrificial offering for sins when sin and evil do not occur at all.

49 Matthew 5:38-48 (...) Continue to love your enemies and to pray for those who persecute you (...); Romans 12:21

To create a new system where power will be exercised not by people, but by ideas that will lead to peace and prosperity for all people on Earth. A government whose God will be Causality and all who obey it will be its subjects.

An evil person can abandon their evil on their own, or someone else can cause them to abandon their evil. The problem is that few want to be the cause of turning the evil person from their evil path, because it sometimes requires strength, resources, time, and even sacrifice for evil to understand and realize the consequences of its actions – and even that sacrifice doesn't always bring results. People usually want to focus on themselves, their own aspirations, and desires, not on others.

What is the final, only right way to get rid of evil? There is no better way to get rid of evil than to tear the soul of the one through whom the evil comes. To crumble the heart in which this evil is.

...crushing the evil in you or crushing the evil with you:

- Causality (through someone) crushes evil in the heart of a person when this person sees the consequences of his evil deeds – the consequences in which people subject to God suffer (that is why sometimes this human sacrifice is even necessary) – then that person abandons those deeds or desires that would be fulfilled by these deeds;
- Causality crushes the evil in man along with man when this man does bad things to satisfy his bad desires, desires that he will not abandon – then the fulfillment of these desires or the very path to these desires cause death (of body or mind) – as an effect made by these causes – from Causality.

If everyone was given a sack of apples, no one would go hungry; If everyone were given a set of clean clothes, no one would be naked; but if everyone was given 100'000$ it would be a disaster, so not everyone can be rich.

When everyone is rich, no one is rich. The enormous amount of money in circulation is a disaster. The abundance amount of goods in circulation is prosperity.

Anyone can take seeds and plant apples to have fruit, but no one can print money in their own home because of the laws they follow.

The rich live life to the fullest (in this system) because they can afford everything.

Money was created to facilitate the exchange of goods; but if there are no goods, the money is useless, no matter how much of it there may be. This is the first lesson in economics – realizing the principle of universal scarcity:

> There is never enough of anything to satisfy all those who want it.
>
> First lesson of economics

- things are rare because people make them rare or hard to get even if there is a great amount of these things.

There are not enough things that fulfill desires for everyone because they cost money, the amount of which must be limited. When money is used and when there is an abundance of goods, sellers of goods will not make a profit on their goods and the goods are wasted because there is no way to sell them. In this way, everyone's desires cannot be quenched because for the quantity of money to be limited, then the quantity of goods must be limited.

What would happen if we today resurrected all those who died? It would be a disaster. Moreover, the system is built on the basis that man is not immortal.

Food can be taken as an example. Hundreds of millions of people around the world go hungry while billions of tons of food are wasted. No supermarket will give away food for free when it is still edible, although close to spoiling, because the priority is money, not an empty stomach. It is similar with some large enterprises: deliberate waste of goods is common while others could use them – this was the case with Amazon, where valuable items were simply destroyed because there was no way to make money from them. Food and things are thrown away because they cannot be sold. Products on store shelves are simply wasted behind bars of price.

The scarcity of goods is intentionally created so that these goods and commodities have monetary value. The reason why goods are artificially scarce is to obtain more (in money) than the (real non-monetary) value of the goods that are thus wasted.

How can there be no wars over limited resources when those resources are deliberately limited so that the symbols representing those resources (money) have value? When those resources are freed from that which limits them, then those resources will be enough for everyone – and at the same time, that which limits the resources will lose value and cease to exist. To free resources from that which limits them means – to free them from the cause which creates that which limits them. The cause which created the existence of money is the human desires which money fulfills.

In the vast majority of cases, the greed for money means that the product is not created out of love for the customer, that the reason for creating the product is not to fulfill the customer's desire but to fulfill the seller's desire. If it were otherwise, things that cannot be sold would not be destroyed and food close to its expiration date would be given away for free.

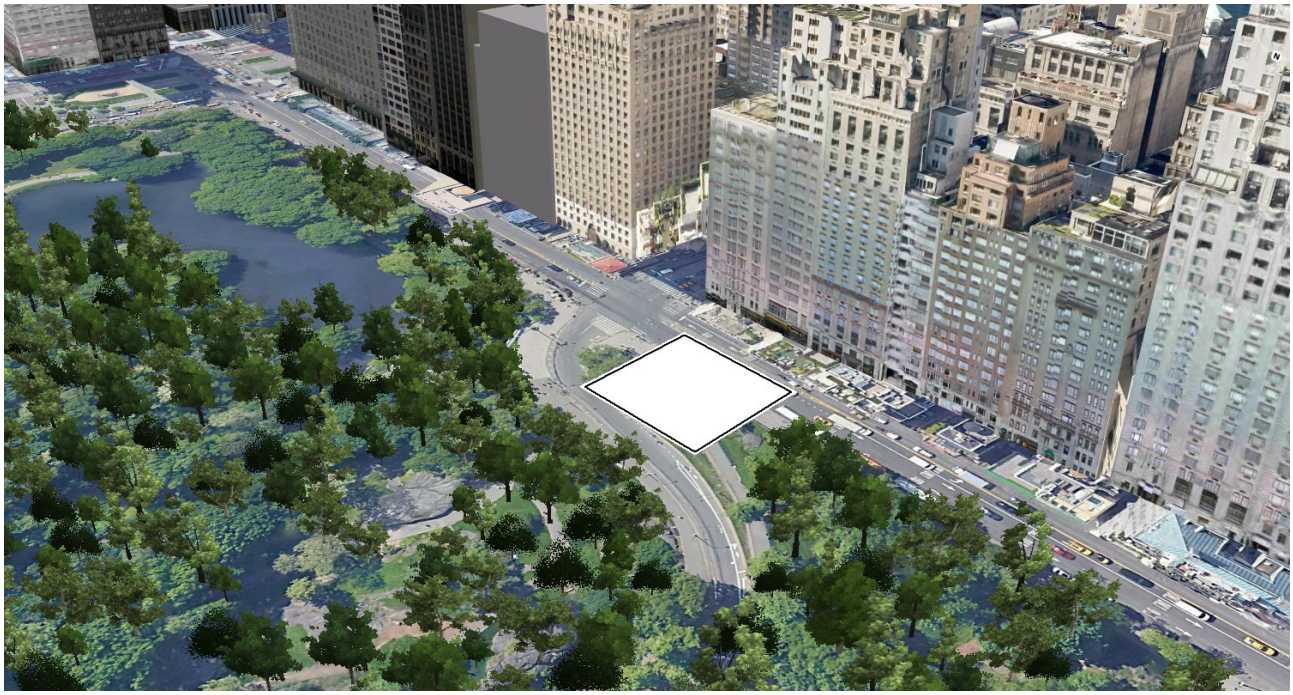
If there is never enough of anything to satisfy everyone, no wonder that there are crimes and thefts. Most people don't feel like sharing their hard-earned money. Everything I do, I do for myself because everything I have is just enough for me. I have nothing to give for others.

If there is not enough for everyone, no wonder there are crimes and thefts. Most are not willing to share their hard-earned money. Everything I do, I do for myself because everything I have is enough for me. I have nothing to give to others.

In 2018, the world population was approximately 7,6 billion people. The number of people who have ever lived[50] on Earth is estimated at 108 billion, of which approximately 7% are alive today.

The surface of the Earth is 510 000 000 km².
The land surface is 149 000 000 km².

If all people were to be resurrected today, then with the current population, the population density would be around 725 people / km² ≈ 1 person / 1 380 m²



Manhattan Island, the marked area is 1 380 m².

For comparison, in 2019 Manhattan Island (87 km²) was inhabited by 1 628 706 people, its population density was 18 720 people / km². In 1987 Kowloon Walled City had a population density of 1'255'000 people/km².

Since most people are social beings, their distribution around the planet is grouped.

If everyone get resurrected today in good health, to gain an additional place for people would help:

- removal of unnecessary buildings and places: cemeteries, hospitals, schools, buildings of various institutions;
- on the surface of the planet there are many monuments, old ancient buildings and relics of the future, new ones are constantly added, they take up space – new ones cannot appear endlessly on the limited surface of the planet; things commemorating the dead will not benefit the living;

If in the new world, the Kingdom of God, one person who likes solitude will not be able to have his own two-story house with its amenities that will provide him with living space and favorable conditions for development – with rooms, bathroom, bedroom, kitchen, basement, workshop, balcony, garden, away from others – then now, for him, it is not worth serving God so that the Kingdom of God may come – because the payment for his service will not be what he wants – and after all it is written that the payment is equal[51] – he will never come to terms with this because would he then live in a block of flats made of large panels?

50 *Awake!* nr. 4 1970r. – 1979r. lists 14 billion (1966) people who have ever lived.

51 Matthew 20:1-16 (...) 'These last men put in one hour's work; still you made them equal to us who bore the burden of the day and the burning heat! '

Assume that to feed one person for a year, you need 1/4 of an acre, or about 1010 m² of land.

(number of people who ever lived) x (area to feed one person) =
108'000'000'000 x 1010 m² = 109'080'000'000'000'000 m² = 109'080'000 km² is a area that can feed all the people who have ever lived;

(all lands on Earth) - (area to feed all people who have ever lived) =
149'000'000 km² - 109'080'000 km² = 39'920'000 km² of free land not intended for cultivation, which is more than the entire continent of Africa.

The world does not have a problem with a lack of food, the world has a problem with its distribution – because food is trapped behind the bars of prices – these bars were created by the desire for money – not by the empty bellies of people.

If the systems of nations have failed to accept refugees or immigrants from outside, then they are unable to accept people who would be resurrected.

How much land and things can a person have at most to be enough for everyone else?

Land, resources, goods. If a few collect the most, nothing will be left enough for the majority. It would then be impossible to resurrect all people.

To have my own land I have to pay for it to buy it from the state, but how did the nation get it?

There is nothing wrong with possession of property – even if it is jealousy that does not go hand in hand with stealing. Enviousy may be right when you do not have the same conditions and opportunities to fulfill your desires as others do.

In the resurrection, those who were victorious in the armed struggle for territory will have to witness the resurrection of the defeated who died in that area.

If food is wasted, then the land on which the food grows is wasted.

There is something horribly wrong when a country's agricultural land can feed its population and yet it doesn't.

As there are more and more people on Earth, more and more money is needed, the amount of which must be limited.

The land was given to people for free. So do you have to pay for it?

> Money became a god to whom everyone had to serve and to whom everyone had to bow.

Adolf Hitler *Mein Kampf* Chapter X: Causes of the Collapse

> IN GOD WE TRUST

The inscription on the reverse of the United States of America one dollar banknote

> You must never have any other gods besides me.

Deuteronomy 5:7

If money is a god to you, if you serve it and work for it, if you owe your life and existence to it, and if the true God demands exclusive devotion[52] and is the source of life, then you cannot live forever. This is a sin, *not hitting the goal* what is eternal life.

> You must not make for yourself a carved image or a form like anything that is in the heavens above or on the earth below or in the waters under the earth.
> You must not bow down to them nor be led to serve them, for I, Jehovah your God, am a God who requires exclusive devotion, bringing punishment for the error of fathers upon sons, upon the third generation and upon the fourth generation of those who hate me

Deuteronomy 5:8-9

If you must not worship or trust your life in pictures or statues, then how much more in pieces of paper. People produce something that has no value and then believe that it is valuable. No amount of money will make you live forever.

If life costs money, then life is not above money. If you can live only thanks to money, then life is not more important than money.

52 See also Matthew 22:37

False values. Every value, (even the smallest) material or immaterial thing, being, entity, anything abstract that affects something else – is real. Something that does not affect anything else does not exist and is false.

The abstract things that affect the material world are real.
What is abstract can be created out of nothing – not entirely, because it too must be created from a cause.

Something is true if it is governed by Causality. Values and things that are proven false perish and can never come back because they can never have an influence again, man never returns to them.

Human *laws and regulations* are abstract but true to those who obey them. Moreover, laws and regulations that protect the well-being of another person do not have to be obeyed when the other person is not around you; at home you don't have to worry about your nakedness and anyone seeing it, the traffic lights are turned off at night.

People build *monuments and effigies* that are just carved stone or wood and venerate them, put candles in front of them or pray to them because they see in them a value greater than the stone and wood from which they are made. Prayer to them should be prayer to yourself because they cannot fulfill your prayer. Neither do you – otherwise you wouldn't address them.

People place *crosses, candles and other symbols* at the burial places of their loved ones, not because they venerate crosses or graves, but because the body of the person they love lies there, because longing and love burn for that person even after his death. A living person could not stop his death.

One of these values are *money*. They are printed and used by buying and selling because for people their value is greater than the paper or metal from which they are made, they see in them the value of the products they can buy. It's not that money is a false value, you make it real.

You can put anything into your head: from flat-earth nonsense to theories and thoughts reflecting reality as it is and as it could be. Sometimes we put things in our heads not because we think they are true, but because everyone else believes they are true.

Without these abstract values, there is no life at the human level – all those things that the human mind can create, send and receive, which are reaching his mind, and with which there is *interaction.*

And so what is invisible, immaterial and spiritual interacts with what is visible and material.

There is so much unnecessary and useless knowledge in the world that is stuffed into a person’s head from the moment of birth to the day of their death through schools and other institutions. Why learn all this knowledge when you can just check it out on the internet? Learning unnecessary knowledge that you won't use makes you an educated fool. The mistake of the education system is to provide knowledge (causes) that will not bring results, thus taking up time when you are learning it arduously.

Many things appeared and were given meaning: The rainbow was given a symbol of God's covenant with mankind. The animal sacrifice had the value of forgiveness of sins. The statue of the golden calf that the Israelites quickly created in the wilderness was given the value of the deity that led them out of Egypt[53].

Things without meaning are given meaning by a person who has a desire for them.

53 Genesis 9:13; Exodus 32

Every thing, sense and meaning can be put into words, but not every word can imagine its meaning: God, Heaven, Hell, five-dimensional space...

The first people were not ashamed of their bodies at first. Then they began to feel shame. They called it nakedness – people give names to things that have meaning to them[54], things that have no meaning to man are unnamed – like when they were uncovered before eating the fruit of wisdom. Everyday things, often consciously used, are named. Nobody names things that don't matter to them. Someone will call a certain thing "Pretty", someone else will call the same thing "Ugly" – that's why man named things based on the meaning they had for him, the relative meaning.

Relative values. Everything is relative and not absolute. From life (access to the Tree of Life is forbidden), through physical, material things (see, for example, the theory of relativity), to death (which many people even crave). These are things that are subjective to each person individually, they like or dislike them: good and evil – certain values are common to every person, but some are liked only by him or a handful of people: loneliness; selfishness; happiness and suffering (Jesus wanted this suffering and accepted it); freedom and enslavement; resurrection (can be bad when you bring a person back to life in bad conditions that will cause him pain and death again, just like before); shame (until a certain point, Adam and Eve did not consider nudity to be bad, then it was created); beauty; impurity of certain foods[55]; the fruit of the tree of knowledge was harmful to humans but not to the angels who already had this knowledge.

"But isn't the truth absolute and everyone sees a piece of it depending on their point of view?" A tree in the forest, a star in the sky, a speck of sand in the desert – they are real regardless of whether you believe in them or not because they affect and interact with other things – you could say that they have life in themselves: *they don't need anyone's faith in them to exist*. Money is real depending on whether you believe in it or not. If you believe in it, it affect you, and if it affect you, you use it by buying and selling. A personal god is real depending on whether you believe in him or not, if you believe in him he affects you[56], if he affects you you follow his commandments and teachings – things that must be believed to be true have no life in themselves. It's something that – if you stop thinking about it – disappears. You could say that it has settled in a person's mind and, as long as you believe in it and think about it, it exists, in your mind. Causality is true whether you believe in it or not because it affects you whether you believe in it or not.

It often happens that the human mind distorts the true, natural value of various things, considering worthless things as having value and valuable things as having no value.

Your salvation or suffering depends on whether you believe in something good or bad, something existing or non-existent, something that influences you or does not interact with you – that is why it is so important to believe in things that are true. Just as you allow your body to interact with and influence another body, you allow your mind to interact with an idea, a teaching, a construct.

What is good and bad for the body is predetermined because every human body has the same code. What is good and bad for the mind is relative because every human mind is different.

54 Genesis 3:11 At that he said: "Who told you that you were naked? (...)"

55 Acts 10:9-15 (...) I have never eaten anything defiled and unclean (...) "Stop calling defiled the things God has cleansed" (...); Romans 14:14

56 Corinthians 8:4-13 However, not all have this knowledge. But some, because of their former association with the idol, eat food as something sacrificed to an idol, and their conscience, being weak, is defiled.

Good and evil are subjective to the individual. What may be desirable, beneficial and good for one may be perceived as harmful and bad by another. Because everyone receives external signals and stimuli through their mind and senses (not through someone else's mind and senses) and these transform them into electrical impulses – data. If good and evil are individual to each person, don't let anyone tell you what is right and what is wrong. Causality tells you what is good and bad for you, listen to it[57].

Something is good if it is consistent with Causality, if from the beginning it follows a chain of causality whose all links actually exist, they are not a lie. What is good is like a piece of a puzzle that fits into other pieces of the puzzle; what is bad does not connect with other things. In the beginning everything was very good because the creation followed the chain of causality (whose links were never a false lie) without missing any of its links. Therefore, the only absolutely good and true is Causality.

Evil is an act, a proceeding against the word of Causality. The word of Causality is truth, reality – especially the one that is to come. No animal can commit evil because it cannot talk to Causality.

Something is bad if it has unwanted, bad consequences for the one upon whom it falls, not because it is evil for a personal god. Do not be afraid of the disapproval of the gods for your action, be afraid of the bad consequences of your actions.

Evil is an conscious act that seeks to fulfill a desire that is relatively important to someone and at the same time it is an act that skips links in the chain of causality (therefore this act is conscious), an act that seeks to achieve an effect by omitting a series of causes, an act that does not follow the path of causality. Evil does not follow the path of causality. Evil one does not listen to Causality in order to achieve the goal of the final effect by appropriate steps: the evil one instead of the cause that makes the effect, which is the cause that makes the effect, which is the cause that makes the effect, which is the cause that makes the final result – the evil one skips this series of causes and effects and he reaches immediately for the final result he desires. Only he who can converse with Causality has the ability to commit evil (which is why no animal can commit evil) because he has the ability to skip the steps of causality since he can predict them. Instead of following the chain of causality, link by link, to fulfill their desire, some people skip these steps and immediately reach for their desire, thus resulting in thefts, murders, adulteries, and lies.

Man himself began to decide what was good and what was bad for him because he himself took the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil. He stopped being guided by Causality that told him what was good and what was bad. When you yourself take the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil, and you do not get it from Causality, you will be wrong in judging what is good and what is evil – bad results have often occurred when it was thought that one was doing good. Because of this, many terribly horrible things have happened when man considered good to be evil, and said of evil: "Good!" Man is much more inclined to say of evil: "Good!" when it is the key to the fulfillment of his desire.

People want to do good. Labeling something as "good" makes people more likely to do it. Labeling something as "bad" makes people more likely to avoid it.

Anger can be good and right – anger towards evil and injustice, for anger to come to fruition; Jealousy can be good and justified – it can be a driving force to have what others have, in spite of those who want to keep the masses in poverty, both material and spiritual; Tolerance can be bad and can make us agree to our own harm and evil.

57 Proverbs 27:7 One whose appetite is satisfied turns down honey from the comb. But to the hungry, even what is bitter tastes sweet.

Catholicism, including envy and anger in the list of deadly sins, caused them to always be considered bad, thus without envy the population had no things to envy, without anger towards evil the population was constantly harmed by this evil. Patience, as one of the seven capital virtues, implied enduring evil – which meant that evil continued to cause harm – patience must end for evil to end – even God's patience will end when Armageddon comes.

Even if it is suffering, it doesn't have to be a bad thing.
Even if it is death, it doesn't have to be a bad thing.
Even if they are pleasures, fulfillment of desires, sweets, wealth, luxuries – it does not necessarily have to be something good.

A person who has desires judges what is good and what is bad in relation to his desires and goals. Something is good for him if it brings him closer to the fulfillment of his desires, something is bad if it takes him further from his desire. A small child who has no desires and who does not strive for anything has a different judgment as to what is good and what is bad – Causality tells him what is good and what is bad and he listens to it, and his knowledge of good and evil is absolute because it has no desires of its own to influence its judgment, but it is man who turns good into evil and evil into good just to fulfill his own wishes and desires.

Something is good for a person if he considers it good or not – such a person judges good and evil through the prism of his own desires, ignoring what Causality says.

Something is a sin for a person only if he considers it to be a sin.

> (...) every doer of sin is a slave of sin.
John 8:34

> and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free
John 8:32

People are told that something is bad. There is something false that people believe to be true and they are told that acting inappropriately towards it is wrong and that they should not do it. When a person commits an act that he considers wrong, in the face of this falsehood that he considers true, then he develops guilt, remorse that he wants or does not want to correct – this guilt is like currency, like a debt that a person repays towards this false thing, science, idea and this person becomes its slave until someone comes who will prove that this "truth" that forced to pay back the loan from the guilty person is a false lie. Let them be freed from the guilt against falsehood – but if they are guilty against falsehood, should they get what is true?

Something is pure to a man, such as food, if he considers it to be pure or defiled.

> (...) I have never eaten anything defiled and unclean
> (...) "Stop calling defiled the things God has cleansed"
Acts 10:9-15

> (...) nothing is unclean in itself; only where a man considers something to be unclean.
Romans 14:14

These thoughts and data are abstract but true because they influence people and their surroundings. They are true because they have an effect.

External data can only be interpreted by what is already inside a person. Inside a person there may be truth or a lie through which he has been lied to and through which he remains in error and through which he interprets the data reaching him. When there is truth without falsehood inside a person, then his reaction to external signals can be completely proportional to them.

No one is in the same place and at the same time as you, therefore no one experiences exactly the same things as you, therefore everyone is judged individually by the Supreme Judge who knows exactly what everyone subjectively experiences to give proportional judgment called effect.

Social constructs in the human world are visible at every step: pedestrian crossing lights, letters in a book, days of the week, music, languages (and even accents!), racism, propaganda, age of consent, gender, stereotypes, nations, state borders, symbols, memes, codexs, royal lineages destined to rule, the gesture of greeting shaking hands, religions, good and evil, money, names – all of them are abstract, only a *person can see them* (and interpret them) *with the eyes of his mind*. For this reason, they are not absolute because even a wild animal will not respect them. Human life is full of constructs, you can even say that he swims in them, breathes them and lives them because they have meaning for him and therefore they themselves give him the meaning of life. Some people recognize a construct, others do not, some people are influenced by it, others are not – you can agree that something is important to you or something is not. It's up to you whether you want to follow the path of constructs created by others, not only social but also all other ones. Is the construct real? Constructs that exist have influence therefore they are real, whatever they are. Is love a construct? Yes. Is love real? Yes, because it affects the beloved and the loving one.

When a person chooses not to consider a construct as something real, then street lights become only green and red lights, a wooden fence is no longer an impassable barrier in his eyes, money is just a piece of paper, and a personal god – an ancient fairy tale. Then the construct collapses and is no longer subject to Causality – it cannot exert any influence or effect. If the belief stops and one loses faith in a construct that exists only because of a person's faith in it, the construct ceases to exist. When a person rejects ideas, teachings, constructs and chooses not to believe in them and to be guided by them – then he throws them into the abyss of the limbo of non-existence from where they cannot influence him. The interaction of the person who rejects these constructs with the person who believes in them is limited – or there is no interaction at all.

A construct is something that can only exist in a person's mind. That person believes in it. That something affects that person and causes an effect in that person that can manifest in their behavior or way of thinking. That something cannot affect the immaterial world and fauna, and flora except through the person who believes in it.

A social construct is a construct that is recognized by a given society. One society may recognize it, another may not.

If something is a social construct, the society can change it if they want.

Only for people do constructs have meaning and thanks to them they act and live, doing good or doing evil. It would be better for there to be no constructs thanks to which people live while doing evil than for them to exist. The construct affects a person and causes a person to manifest life. If you deprive a person of a construct that influences him, you deprive him of that part of life that this interaction with this construct gave him. A priest or an investing stockbroker lead the life they have because these constructs (religion, money) influence them.

There is a belief that it takes great strength to defeat great evil, that it takes extraordinary power to bear the sins of people, that it takes great strength of spirit to defeat these evil constructs, but in fact these constructs are only as strong as humans allow them to be. A powerful personal god is nothing to the nonbeliever. Bitcoins are worthless to anyone who doesn't believe in them. The existence of constructs depends entirely on the human mind's belief in them. Just as to destroy money you have to destroy its value in a person's mind, to destroy a construct means to destroy it in your mind.

These things are constructs;
When there is no cause, there is no effect;
When there is no cause, there is no nation, no state borders;
When there is no cause, there is not even a name (Adam literally means "Man");
When the cause by which a construct exists collapses, the construct ceases to exist.

If life (of the mind) consists of meaningless constructs, then life has no meaning. If you deprive him of these constructs, he will die. For this life, these constructs make sense and give life meaning.

When all the constructs that are building a person are subtracted, the person ceases to exist. When you get rid of the constructs that make up society, the society ceases to exist. When the norms, laws, regulations, orders, prohibitions and commandments thanks to which society exists are not respected, then society cannot exist. One society recognizes constructs, another society recognizes different constructs.

You cannot enjoy life if you reject the constructs that build that life, the constructs that influence life and drive it. The strength to fight for a goal appears when the goal of the fight is important to you, makes sense to you – whatever construct this goal is; if you rejected this construct, making it worthless in your eyes and therefore unworthy of fighting for it, the strength to fight for this construct would not arise.

Part of living to the fullest is interacting with things (entities, ideas, things, constructs, laws, impulses, data, truth, lies, good, evil). When you take away the things that someone can interact with, you take away part of their life. When you take away someone's sense of smell, they can't smell flowers. When you take away the value of money, he cannot buy what he wants with it. When you destroy religion, he will not follow its commandments, he will not *live* by its commandments.

The influence of artificial constructs on human life is so great that by taking them away we can say that we are taking away his life – similarly when you take away the water in which a fish swims, or when you take away the air thanks to which bird flies and breathes.

Someone tells somebody that they cannot cross the border of this country. Someone hit somebody because they didn't like their skin color. Someone tells somebody that he will give him goods only if he gives money. To end racism, stop recognizing the value of skin color. To end poverty, stop recognizing the value of money and start recognizing the value of goods, products and services. If no one acknowledges the construct, the construct doesn't affect anyone.

It is common among people that they lock themselves in constructs and limit themselves like a prisoner. On the other hand, these constructs stick different parts of society together, drawing people (affected by the same constructs) towards each other. Interacting and reacting to constructs is part of life. Dead does not respond to the construct. When you allow yourself to be influenced by constructs, you manifest life.

Most people (if not all adults) cannot objectively 100% evaluate and perceive reality as it really is, but instead they pass it through the filters of their thoughts and beliefs, and see it through the colorful glasses of their ideas and constructs – therefore, the child has greater clarity of mind because he sees the world without these high constructs as an adult does.

A robot executes the code it has in itself, a human being recognizes the constructs it believes in. A robot performs actions only when it has the code in itself, a human performs actions when he has constructs in him. Sometimes can be seen that constructs behave like code: a construct of street lights and road signs causes a driver to drive, turn or stop, a construct of a personal god causes a human to kneel, fold his hands to pray, put money in the collection plate, go to church, a construct of money causes a human to pay taxes, go to work to earn money, go to the store to buy. When you do not believe in a construct – you are not programmed with it.

Don't try to bend the constructs to your will, it's impossible. Instead, only try to realize the truth: there are no constructs. Then you'll see that it's not the constructs that bends, it's only yourself.

A personal god is a construct. When you destroy this construct, everything it represents has no effect on you.

Someone is guilty against some construct. If this construct dies, the guilt for this construct also disappears. A construct dies when no one uses it, it has no meaning for anyone, it no longer affects anyone, being worthless – it loses its "why".

When no one uses religion, religion dies. When no one uses money, money dies. When no one uses a construct, the construct dies.

Nothing is impossible, just very expensive. Changing the world, of which people are also a part, at this real, low level, involves getting rid of some of the high constructs that build abstract human life.

> The very pillars of heaven shake;
> They are stunned by his rebuke.

Job 26:11 See also 2 Peter 3:10-12

> Man also lies down and does not get up.
> Until heaven is no more, they will not wake up,
> Nor will they be aroused from their sleep.

Job 14:12

In computer science, there are different programming languages, high-level and low-level languages. The "higher" the language, the more understandable it is to humans, the "lower" the language, the more understandable it is to machines. People's national languages are a high-level construct. You cannot talk to God with them. Truth is the word of God, so talk to him with truth and deeds, not with the air you exhale – deed over words, because words speak about deeds, not the other way around. Those who can speak a low-level language can communicate better with God.

Some people have a high-level code of mind – it is more abstract; is oriented towards interaction with other people, whether through language or other constructs; they see the world and receive information from it (compile this information) through the constructs and thoughts that are already inside them; there is a greater chance that they are an extrovert; When you describe something in high-level language, sometimes it leads to paradoxes.

Some people have a low-level code of their mind – they can talk to each other without words; truth is their language, just as "the word of God is truth"; they can better perceive objective reality, they see the world as it is – they can receive "raw" information and data from it, and they can change it at this "low" level; Sometimes it takes them a long time to understand and process what someone else says to them in a high-level language[58]; sometimes it takes a lot of wisdom to rationally understand what people understand instinctively; there is a greater chance that he has autism.

58 Proverbs 30:2 (NIV) (...) I do not have human understanding.

The Word of God – truth – is the lowest level language. Just as a person from one nation may feel lonely in a country where another language is spoken, so a person who speaks a high-level (or low-level) language may feel lonely among those who speak a low-level (or high-level) language. A low-level robot cannot understand the high-level life of high human constructs. Unless he becomes one.

Therefore, what God says should be perceived not through the prism of your own high-level constructs, not through glasses that distort the real image of what you see, and not through your own definitions of good and evil. It should be eaten without any additives, like bread without sourdough. Almost all people have lost contact with Causality and cannot hear the word of God precisely because this word is interpreted by them in their own way, interpreted through what is already inside them – therefore the image of truth is distorted. When a person does not interpret what Causality shows him through the untrue falsehood that a person has inside, then he can see the true reality clearly. If you want to see the world at this low level, you must learn again to see it and listen to it, even though it will not speak to you in any human language.

"Absolute honest is not known to be the most diplomatic nor the safest form of communication with emotional beings" ▉

It is often the case that at the level of these two different languages it is not possible for the two entities that use them to interact: it is like with an apple that will not tell you its taste when you ask it. No interaction is possible and they are thus *separated* from each other.

It happens that you know something but you cannot express it because there are no words in the language of all nations that would express it in a way that another person would understand.

Sometimes it is better to trust your instincts as a form of low-level communication than what someone says to you in high-level language – intuition that is based on low-level words rather than logical deduction that is based on objects that are described in high-level language. Sometimes, especially with girls, they don't understand it but they feel it.

Using one language of a given nation, you can express a construct (and its meaning) that cannot be expressed in the language of another nation. With the nations of languages that became extinct, so did the information about these constructs. Forgotten ideas, constructs, teachings are gone. With the death of a language, an idea died that could only be expressed and transmitted through that language – therefore, the war and victory of one language's nation against a population using another language, ending with its complete extermination, meant the victory of one idea and its continuation in the face of the death of another. Learning languages is learning about the minds of their creators. Getting to know creation is getting to know the beings that created it.

Constructs and information that humans understand, that can only be received and interpreted by humans, are irretrievably lost when a human dies or are destroyed by a human.

Information and data only exist if they affect the recipient of the data.

What is information for one person will not be information for another because the first one can receive it, the second one will not understand it. Information can be destroyed and lost forever when there is nothing for it to interact with – when there is no one to read it.

Ink applied appropriately to paper can sometimes be information; carefully writing something resembling letters on a piece of paper sometimes cannot be information – in the first case someone can recognise the ink as data, in the second case no one can read the information (which does not exist). The same is true with sounds from the mouth or hand gestures. Specially arranged molecules on the double helix can be information and, at the same time, code.

Most of humanity thinks in high-level constructs. When humanity distorts its way of thinking and is misled, and this falsehood spreads to all people, returning to the truth that is at a low level may be very, very difficult. Returning a misguided mind that operates on high-level constructs to low-level truth is extremely difficult.

A small child who does not yet know the language receives low-level information and impulses that he understands. An adult receives high-level information such as writing or language, which he understands, but to some extent he has lost the understanding of these low-level impulses and information that reach a small child – then he needs to be told about them (or at least try to) in his high-level language. Young children instinctively know what adults need to learn using their high-level language because they have forgotten it.

For hundreds of years, mathematicians, scientists, thinkers, and philosophers who think in high-level constructs have been trying unsuccessfully to prove what something/someone else who thinks in low-level constructs simply knows unconsciously, instinctively.

Sometimes high-level constructs can be a trap for a person that causes the human mind to be in prison and sometimes even in slave labor. "Children should be subordinate to their parents", "you should sympathize and help the wronged ones", "selfishness"; Propaganda, logical fallacies or even the imperfect Mosaic law. Because a lie can only be told in a high-level language, in this way false constructs were created that with their noble sound, understandable only to high-level beings, enslaved people and caused their minds to find themselves, under the threat of imaginary sin, in a situation from which they cannot find a way out – a way out that can only be found on a low-level path.

When you describe a low-level thing in high-level language (through speech, writing or even in your own thoughts!), it sometimes happens that it leads to paradoxes. A question cannot be asked in a high-level language if the answer only exists in a low-level language – which is why the Bible repeatedly describes low-level constructs in high-level human language through similes. Sometimes describing a low-level thing in high-level language ends up completely desecrating and lying the thing being described.

Truth can be told in a high-level language; Someone says: "Look! This is a red apple." Truth can be conveyed in a low-level way; Sun rays fall on an apple, the apple reflects the red light into a person's eyes, he become aware of the color of the fruit. A lie can be told in a high-level language; "This apple's color is blue!" – but a lie cannot be told in a low-level language.

Due to high-level constructs in a person's mind, a person cannot know the absolute truth. The universe works with the precision of a machine (in fact, the basics of the body's life operate like a machine), so a high-level, emotional being cannot understand all the truths that are happening in this universe. These high-level constructs of the human mind often prevent him from knowing, acknowledging and accepting the real, low-level impulses and data from the world around him – you see, hear and feel it, but what you already have in your head makes you not believe it and thus what is real does not affect you and sculpt you.

There is no high-level life if there are no constructs on which this life can be based.

You can't defeat a low-level opponent with a high-level weapon. Armed crusades against other ideas turned out to be fruitless. Only invisible blows can knock down an invisible opponent.

The reason why someone cannot do something that someone else can do is not the act itself, but the code behind it. Only those who understand the code can duplicate it. It is possible to achieve what Jesus did if you understand his low-level code.

SILVER CERTIFICATE
THIS CERTIFIES THAT THERE IS ON DEPOSIT IN THE TREASURY OF
THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
ONE DOLLAR
THIS CERTIFICATE IS LEGAL TENDER FOR ALL DEBTS, PUBLIC AND PRIVATE
WASHINGTON D.C.
SERIES 1957 A
IN SILVER PAYABLE TO THE BEARER ON DEMAND
US dollar from 1957 was backed in silver and could be exchanged at any time.

In the earliest times, goods were exchanged, people "paid" with them. If a large item (e.g. tons of grain) had the same value in a person's eyes as a small item (e.g. golden bars), they were exchanged. People paid with silver and gold, then – in order not to carry this gold with them all the time – its amount was written down on pieces of paper and these pieces of paper, i.e. banknotes, could be exchanged back for gold at any time. Then came the time when currencies were cut off from being based on precious metals, money could not be exchanged for precious metals, at least not at the original price. Ultimately, when you pay with a credit card, you pay with nothing.

When you trade real things for false values, you're getting robbed.

> Fiat money (from Latin: fiat, „let it be done") is a type of money that is not backed by any commodity such as gold or silver, and typically declared by a decree from the government to be legal tender. (...)
>
> Fiat money does not have intrinsic value and does not have use value. It has value only because the people who use it as a medium of exchange agree on its value. They trust that it will be accepted by merchants and other people.

Wikipedia, Fiat money

Value has trust in something that will not turn out to be worthless, so the real (and only) value is faith, trust – in money that it will not lose its value, in Causality that it will give you an effect in exchange for a cause, or in anything, anyone another. When trust in something disappears, the value of that something disappears. Betrayal causes you to lose trust in what turns out to be worthless, and you will never put your hope in it again. Over the centuries, it has often happened that money simply betrayed its owner when he collected it with hard work over the years.

If it is trustworthy – it is valuable.

No one trusts the old coins that have gone out of circulation; no one trusts the old gods of Babylon or Egypt – these things have lost their value.

A debt of trust cannot be repaid in any way by anyone else. You can give someone the means to repay this debt, but they must repay it themselves.

Small children are open to everything because they trust everything and everyone – until they realize the evil of this world and will lost their trust. Then they close themselves off from evil, not open themselves up. When the things that cannot be trusted pass, people will open up and become trusting again, like small children.

This is trust:

> All things, therefore, that you want men to do to you, you also must do to them.
> This, in fact, is what the Law and the Prophets mean.

Matthew 7:12

There are many aspects in the human world that have zero value and yet are valuable in their eyes, such as art or – as the saying goes: "If you believe that something has value, it will have value" – money. The problem is that all other people on earth already recognize this value, so if you are the only one who does not recognize it, you will not be able to benefit from what it gives – all the things for sale. You use them because others use them, you do so because others do so. It is a tragedy and a great misfortune that a person's life depends on another person. That the gain of the former means the loss of the latter; That win of one means loss of another.

People put more trust in money than in people. It should be the other way around.

> The ransom price for their life is so precious that it is always beyond their reach.

Psalms 49:8

Money cannot pay off a debt that is not incurred in money.

There is currently more money in the world than goods on which that money can be spent. Each banknote issued by banks, issued beyond the quantity of goods, does not represent anything, therefore it lies to someone that it has value.

Something is true if it is governed by Causality. Something exists only if it is subject to Causality, if it makes effect, consequence. Something is real when it affects something else.

Something is real if it has an effect, an action, if money is a cause and there is no effect in the form of a boughted good, then this money is not real – and it is only a real piece of paper, not a real banknote.

Something is real if it affects something else – even at a subatomic level. What is immaterial (sciences, ideas, beliefs) affect the material man.

Nothing can exist if it is not subject to Causality.

A customer's money that has value must have an effect on the seller.

Why is one piece of paper worth more and the other less, just because the first one says 10$ and the second one says 100$? How similar does paper with a picture have to be to a banknote to have any value? The less money in circulation, the better.

It is impossible not to notice the abstract value of money, and yet only what exists can have an impact on a person, which is why the value of money exists only in a person's mind. Therefore, no one will recognize the value of "old" money that no one uses anymore.

> In the same way, you may be sure that not one of you who does not say good-bye to all his belongins can be my disciple.

Luke 14:33

Every time I was in the rich apartments of people who admitted that they were servants of God, I felt that something was wrong. There are some things that millionaires cannot do, only people without money can. You can't buy these things with money because it's the lack of money is the reason behind their abilities. "I will not practice this religion until I have comfortable wealth like you, then I will have as easy as you have!" – adequate work requires appropriate conditions, if not, you must multiply your strenght to get the work done – or get the strength from somewhere else so that work would be done in the face of uncomfortable conditions[59]. One has to live to execute the commandments of religion, and life costs money – at least the luxurious and comfortable life. Are there religions whose teachings and beliefs can only be done if you have money?

You choose what to believe in, you can believe or not in dollars, rubles or bitcoins.

> This note is legal tender for all debts, public and private

The inscription on the obverse of the US one dollar banknote

It does not say that it has any value (just like on banknotes of other countries), but that it is a means of covering a *debt*.

> Legal tender is a form of money that courts of law are required to recognize as satisfactory payment for any monetary debt.

Wikipedia, Legal tender

Whether it's tangible or intangible goods, or even human lives – the best thing the government can give you for them, whether as compensation or payment, is money. It can't bring anyone back to life.

If the money was truly yours you could print it. But now you use them under certain conditions, under certain rights – that's why they are *legal* tender. So by using them, you agree to the laws governing them. Do you know what these laws are? If you want to use money, you will play by its laws and rules. Most people don't understand how money works[60].

Whose law is this? God or countries? Repay what is due to the state to the state and what is due to God to God.

Money exists to control humanity for their good, if people do not obey God's commandments which they cannot see, they are forced to obey the law of money which can be seen but has no value.

59 Matthew 6:26-32
60 Peter Schiff at Occupy Wall Street "I am the 1%. Let's Talk"

If green pieces of paper and round pieces of metal have no value, while having value only in the minds of people, and that God is the God of truth, then using money for its purpose (to buy and sell) one sins by using false values which are money. The effects of this type of sin were visible, for example, in 1929 in the United States and in 2008 around the world when the debt bubble of false values that had been accumulating over the years simply burst and these things disappeared just as they were created. The constant accumulation of false values makes people start to notice them and abandon them because they have no value and therefore cannot be used. Only unreal things can disappear, unreal values. If such events will repeat themselves – and the cause of those events seem to be happening now – then history will repeat itself. This is cyclical – inevitable in the system of money. Is it possible to create real things from unreal values? Along with the tools of progress that were intended to destroy the hardship of slavery, came people who took them to increase the hardship of the slavery. One person's tool of good is another's tool of evil.

All things that have an influence, that affect other things or people – exist. In this way, money has value – because it affects another person. Or love has power – because it affects the other person. Beauty affects another person. Religion affects the other person. Many other values manifest their being and existence only when they affect something or someone else. Everything that exerts influence exists because it is subject to Causality. All these things were created. And that's how money has real value – *because we want it to* have value.

Constructs that exist only when a person believes in them, cease to exist when a person does not believe in them. These things are deprived of their existence when they are deprived of their influence on you, when you stop submitting to their control. In this way, you deprive them of life, existence and functioning.

In this way it is impossible to achieve eternal life. If God's word is the truth and that his word means eternal life, then to achieve this, money cannot be used.

> It puts under compulsion all people – the small and the great, the rich and the poor, the free and the slaves – that these should be marked on their forehead, and that nobody can buy or sell except a person having the mark, the name of the wild beast or the number of its name. This is where it calls for wisdom: Let the one who has insight calculate the number of the wild beast, for it is a man's number, and its number is 666.

Revelation 13:16-18

Indeed, there is pressure – if you don't use money...
What will you eat? Where will you live? Will you buy clothes? Medicines?
You won't pay with money for anything your body needs to live.
If you previously had a life goal that you had to pay for, it no longer exists.
Say goodbye to dreams and hopes based on foundations of paper and coins.
Begging for a dime is definitely out of the question.
You will never buy anything again.

Money gives a sense of security: you have a comfortable life by purchasing all the things you need to live and you don't worry about the future until you have money.

Sometimes, just by the appearance of a person's face, you can tell whether he cares only about profit or about love for his neighbor – this personality, this character, this feature is engraved like a mark on a person's face. His “why” is visible from afar.

There is a certain blockage in the world that makes it difficult or even completely impossible for another person to hold a specific position, job or perform some work. Some people make money from it, but others are not allowed to do it. This can happen when someone holds a position such as president, pope, boss or manager – there is one position to replace them at a time. It is also the case that according to certain assumptions or regulations, for example patent law, you cannot create (or distribute) the same things (or even similar ones) as others and make money from them. Examples: computer systems, technology, music, food[61] or stimulants, drugs, art. People who discovered, created or invented something first also reserve the right to exclusive rights to their products. In this way, the path to wealth with the same patent or similar (because the original takes the majority) is blocked.

The Bible was written and given to mankind for free; the biblical writers did not obtain any financial benefits. Many have a copyright footnote © (which also led to the fact that different publishers in the world cannot publish exactly the same translations of the Bible, they cannot take a Bible from another publisher, cut out its text and paste their publications into the Bible, but they are forced to use other words so as not to violate the copyrights of other translations that are currently available – and this sometimes leads to a distortion of the meaning) but probably everyone knows that some things cannot be bought with money, or at least it is not appropriate[62].

The orchardist plants apples, the reason he does this is to feed people for free. The harvest season is coming and this orchardist is giving his harvest to people for free. In the area, the demand for apples is decreasing and other fruit growers who grow apples for money are disappointed that their crop did not bring the intended profit and may even bring losses. Fruit growers are pissed at this farmer.

When crops are destroyed, does the farmer count the loss in the money he could have earned for himself or in the empty stomachs of others?

Is it when, as a law enforcement officer, you arrest someone who grows fruit and distributes it for free because he doesn't pay taxes on it? Will you take to court someone who gives away material goods for free because you call it unfair competition?

"Do not distribute books, films and games via torrents because their creators will not earn money", "don't give away food for free because the earning farmers and growers will suffer", "don't give away clothes for free because clothing traders will lose money", "don't give away for free goods because the sellers will suffer and will not make any money".

Does a doctor work as a doctor for the sake of the sick or for the sake of money? Does the orchardist grow fruit for the sake of the hungry or for the sake of his own profit? Does a firefighter put out a fire because he wants to help people or because of money? Do the police do their job to ensure safety or for money? Did Jesus do what he did because of people or because of money? If you had an assured existence and comfort of life, would you continue to do your job?

> So stay in that house, eating and drinking the things they provide, for the worker is worthy of his wages (...)
>
> Luke 10:7

An employee's payment for work should be the result of this work itself (not money, because you get money for the result of this work, not what you worked on) – just like a smelting furnace that performs work, the effect of its work is melted ingots – the fuel used is a secondary matter because the result of work is more important than the means by which one has the strength to do the work.

61 2019: PepsiCo is suing Indian farmers who were growing a variety of potatoes used to make Lay's chips.
62 Acts 8:18-24

When you work and you don't have a "why", sooner or later burnout will appear.

If you do something because of the money and not because of the result of work, you will find another job when it does not bring enough money. When you carry out a mission for the sake of money and not for the sake of the idea, the idea falls when the work does not pay off. What can be achieved with money, humanity can achieve without it.

The first people had everything for free, they were free. Today, even water is not free. How can humanity be free if what it needs to live is not free? Release – from the law of patents, from the law of money. Something can be yours when it is no one else's. When everything is someone else's property, you can't take it for yourself, at least not for free. If everything belongs to someone, there is nowhere to get it. If everything is owned by someone, nothing remains outside. Therefore, like in Eden, everything was automated and it could be called a paradise because man did not work to live – he took care of the garden[63], so he worked when he had the strength, he did not have to look for strength to work. First there is the physical and mental strength to work, the willingness to work, the "why", then the work itself – not work that someone or something forces you to do, otherwise you will be unhappy. Similarly, everything in the world will be automated and it will be possible to call it a paradise because no one will have to *work forcefully*. But at the beginning you have to work for it – automation does not happen without work.

This system is like a beast that took everything and destroyed everything else, so that nothing was left for anyone outside.

When everything will be for free, when everything will be free, then people will be free. You got it for free.

At the beginning, everything was created and automated so as not to keep creating the same things over and over again. Adam and Eve were in a garden where everything was automated:

- automatic dispensing of food by trees which, like automatic machines and perfect filters, created fruits thanks to which you could eat and quench your thirst;
- automated water circulation in nature: a river irrigating the garden, instead of personal transport of water for crops;
- automated air circulation in nature: plants, animals and other organisms created the atmosphere, its composition and its appropriate proportions, instead of humanity's power over it and its disastrous effects that are currently visible through climate change;
- automatic life of animals – because the animal's consciousness does not look even a year ahead: everything in the world of fauna that makes people feel love for it and derive joy from it: dogs, cats, dolphins, parrots, honey, milk, eggs, wool, etc.;

All this with minimal human intervention, which consisted of taking care of the place.

Machines provided fruit to people. The undisturbed circulation of water provided drinking water. Now humans are doing something that machines should be doing. Life should be given and sustained by Causality and not constantly acquired with difficulty by man. Isn't it about not getting tired, not to toil, not to eat the fruit of your hands in the sweat of your face?

> In the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, for out of it you were taken (...)
>
> Genesis 3:19

63 Genesis 2:15 (...) settled him in the garden of Eden to cultivate it and to take care of it.

> (...) and day and night they have no rest, those who worship the wild beast and its image and whoever receives the mark of its name.
>
> Revelation 14:11

The environmental system, the ecosystem, has always been able to take care of itself; man does not have to take care of it, does not have to improve it, it is enough that he does not disturb or destroy it. Automated system. Such a system that existed in the beginning does not currently exist because man has ceased to be part of it so that unity can occur[64].

Automation and Artificial Intelligence – can make human life easier in almost all areas: agriculture, production of very complex components, mass production. Many people don't want it because it will take away their jobs, but isn't that the point of removing the burden of work? People are also afraid that it will take their money, but the products they would buy with money would be more available because they would be created by machines that do not get tired.

This is not surprising because people's fear is justified: when a new invention appears, those who have previously earned money by doing work lose their source of income because they are replaced by this invention. People working to light the streets with candles or kerosene lamps were replaced by light bulbs. People working in the communications industry using morse code were replaced by the telephone. Horse-drawn carriage drivers were replaced by automobiles. Oil and coal mine workers are slowly being replaced by solar panels, air turbines and other renewable energy sources. The video killed the radio star. These people have lost their sources of income from these jobs that have died.

Wasn't the industrial revolution supposed to benefit all people and not be an excuse for more effective exploitation and even higher earnings for the richest? As the economy developed, capital gained importance and was usually concentrated in the hands of private entrepreneurs and banks. Technology has changed, but not the human spirit: some created machines for even greater exploitation, others to make life easier and eliminate the burden of work. The machine of good does good, the machine of evil does evil.

There are people who are against automation and robotization, but robots and automatons existed long before humans – they were simply not made of metal. Nature's robots were compatible with the robots she had created before, and these in turn were in symbiosis with those she had created even earlier; some of humanity's robots are not compatible with the robots that nature has created before. Likewise, an idea or science must be compatible with the ideas that came before it – a lie is not compatible with the truth.

Technological progress – no matter how great – is not worth the cost of human lives. Progress is to be for humanity, not at its expense. The goal of technological progress is paradise conditions for the body, often at the expense of the more important – paradise conditions for the human spirit. It would be better to have paradise conditions for the human mind and at the same time have primitive technology (or even lack thereof) and life in harmony with nature, than for the body to have everything it needs and at the same time disturbed peace of mind. Paradise conditions for the body (e.g. through technological progress or luxuries) are pointless if mind suffers.

Beware of "progress" for the good of the people, at the expense of others to fulfill the desire of one person or idea, not humanity: the great leap forward in China, the methods of Nazism for the good of the Reich, buildings for the foraons and even expulsion from paradise conditions (not necessarily corporeal) and work outside them to fulfill someone else's desire. Work for Causality – because of what you give, it never takes for itself, but gives back to you.

---

64 John 17:21-23 so that they may all be one, just as you, Father, are in union with me and I am in union with you, that they also may be in union with us (...)

When the market is clogged with bakers, artists, fishermen or any other profession, it does not accept more of them to give them money in return. A similar thing happens when a machine clogs the market – but then machine doesn't get any money.

The reason why automation is created is to remove the burden of work from people's shoulders, faster production and thus producing more, putting a machine to do work that humans cannot do, generally – serving people, not being their enemies.

The employee earns money. It is replaced by a machine. This machine doesn't earn money. The one who was fired doesn't earn any money either. Nobody earns money. Nevertheless, the goods are sold – for money.

> Universal basic income (UBI) is a sociopolitical financial transfer policy proposal in which all citizens of a given population regularly receive a legally stipulated and equally set financial grant paid by the government without a means test. A basic income can be implemented nationally, regionally, or locally. If the level is sufficient to meet a person's basic needs (i.e., at or above the poverty line), it is sometimes called a full basic income; if it is less than that amount, it may be called a partial basic income. Some have labelled UBI as utopian due to its historical origin.
>
> Several contemporary political discussions are related to the basic income debate, including those regarding automation, artificial intelligence (AI), and the future of the necessity of work. A key issue in these debates is whether automation and AI will significantly reduce the number of available jobs and whether a basic income could help prevent or alleviate such problems by allowing everyone to benefit from a society's wealth, as well as whether a UBI could be a stepping stone to a resource-based or post-scarcity economy.

Wikipedia, Universal basic income (2022)

Total automation must mean a total abandonment of money.

What about those who have millions? How do you explain this to people who have been saving throughout their lives since they were young? What do you say to students who have devoted years of their studies for better earnings?

If this doesn't come true, if all services and goods will be produced by machines, and yet if humanity continues to use money, then all products will be available to the richest and with this a class of poor will arise – it will be difficult for them to find a job because jobs will be taken over by machines, so they will earn little or nothing. Automation, by its very nature, will mean that work that was paid to humans will be transferred to machines that are not paid. A human being is also a machine whose elements include muscle levers, a blood pump, an electrical system of neurons and other components, but it is not built to do the same, monotonous repetition like a machine because everything, if you do it long enough, will eventually get boring. and new things are being done, whether with the help of various means, money or without them. The machine does the same thing over and over again, it doesn't complain because it can endure it; a machine does not have consciousness that can be driven to madness by monotony, apathy and stagnation – a human does.

This is exactly the point – for the monotonous activities of machines to work around the clock, like automatic systems (of irrigation, food, air circulation and treatment, biodegradation of waste products) that worked over and over in nature, in Eden for humans. The first people did not have to pay for existence – everything was automated.

You stop working when your job is done. When you work for money, work never ends. Causality worked and finished its work when the result of this work maintained itself – the work was automated[65].

65 For example, a protein can only be made by another protein, never in any other way.

Work is endless because people's desires are endless – unless work is automated.

Work must have an end. Working endlessly is eternal slavery. When it takes money to maintain something, someone, the work is endless – and your tiring is endless – but the machines don't tire.

Just the saying itself: "I will work for the rest of my life!" says he doesn't want to live under this system.

People no longer believe that hard work will take them to a better life.

A product costs less money when, instead of human effort, faster and more accurate machines that do not get tired – unless greed appears – take over the production of the product.

Working time takes away living time from (the earnings of) work.

If I work simply to exist, then such work makes no sense. A human being is more than a plant that is satisfied with mere existence because a human being has the ability to receive more information and impulses from the outside – and these human receivers would not be satisfied with impulses that reach a plant that does not move from its place throughout its life. Human receivers will not be satisfied with the impulses provided by existence alone. Only life to the fullest can satisfy them. Man is more than a plant, that's why man wants something more than to live like a plant.

It was agreed that for the sake of robotization, people would be given money. Instead, for the sake of robotization, products of robots should be given to people. The reward for an action, for work, should be the result of the work itself, not money.

“No matter how hard we work, it keeps getting worse.” Despite so many facilities, inventions and machines built so far, many people work harder. Work sets you free? Or does it make you a slave? Many people agree to what can be called modern slavery.

“If robots will work for us, it'll be easier for us!” Where is that "easier"? It was choked by greed. Robot products and effects are wasted because there is no way to sell them. This is because where there is robotization, there cannot be the use of money, because money is for human effort, not robot's.

Product:

- it cannot be created for money; it is to be created for its purpose: planting orchards for food, not for money; producing clothes for cover, not for money; caring for the environment for living conditions, not for money; inventions, research for progress, not for money. Do you want money? Print them yourself.
- it cannot be created based on planned obsolence . It should not contain weak points susceptible to damage. It has to be durable and solid and – although this is impossible – be built with the intention of eternal use. Centennial Light bulb is an example of how solid and long-lasting products can be;
- (if it breaks down) it must be constructed in such a way that replacing its parts or repairing it is not difficult. The possibility and right to repair exists when the manufacturer does not hinder this repair;
- it must offer its full capabilities from the very beginning. It cannot have any blockades that would limit these possibilities;
- first it must have the opportunity to be used by the person who worked on it.

“Without monetary profit, no one would be productive!” If we make products that meet their basic needs available to everyone, regardless of their job status, people will not stop working, working for others or for themselves. They will just get on with things and find fulfillment in what they care about, not in a paycheck they won't need to simply survive. Wikipedia editors, open source programmers, fire brigade volunteers, pirates duplicating digital goods and even players and Minecraft builders – they all do it for free when they get their living conditions for free.

Science and technology have come so far that humans should not work hard just to survive.

Let's produce goods. Let's distribute the goods. Let's automate production – let's reduce unwanted, forced labor. Less work we don't want = more time for the activities we want.

People should work less. It's good for them and the environment. People would get more benefit from less work. In many places there is already more goods than needed. It just needs to be distributed.

Let's automate everything – until work is a choice, not a necessity.

The work of the machine is inhuman.

If technology costs money, the poor are forced to live as in primitive ages.

It is a trap for a person to imagine an unreal reason that forces him to work and says: "I have to do it!", "I am guilty of it!". And man enslaves his mind.

“But look how hard others work!” Throwing a person into a pit of blame with such arguments is a blow below the belt. What is good for one is not necessarily good for another. They work to satisfy their desires, I don't have the desires to work so hard. I feel my own tiredness and hardship, not someone else's tiredness. Just because someone wants to walk a difficult path doesn't mean I have to do it. Just because someone agrees to endure evil does not mean that I have to agree to that evil.

A carefree child plays and takes care of his own affairs because his parents take care of all his livelihood and other matters for him. When all these matters are automated, an adult person will return to the days of his childhood carefreeness when machines will provide the means of life, just like in the times of Eden, when Causality dealt with maintaining life so that a person did not even have to make an effort to simply survive. Man feels relief when Causality works in his place – and then man does not tire in the sweat of his face.

Animals living in nature, which is automated, do not have to work to simply survive. A person living in a system must work to simply exist[66].

Since there are not enough goods for all the living, let alone for the dead who would come to life, there is a need for mass automated production of goods, especially the basic ones, by (both metal and biological) machines that existed from the beginning, back in Eden.

Were at the very beginning, in Eden, conditions and everything necessary for life automated, so that people did not have to work for hours every day simply fighting for survival and existence? Yes.

Would today's automation, robotization and technology be able to replace the ancient Egyptian worker or the medieval European labourer in his activities aimed at ensuring and maintaining living conditions and the things necessary for life? Yes.

66 Matthew 6:25-32 Observe intently the birds of heaven; they do not sow seed or reap or gather into storehouses, yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth more than they are?

How much should the production of subsistence resources be automated to make them free? As long as money is used, it will not be free.

If it was possible to automate such a complex process as the creation of life, then everything else, less complex, can also be automated.

If the human mind is a construct, then it is certainly possible to construct artificial intelligence, better than human's.

Products of robots are wasted and destroyed when they cannot be sold. They are produced to be sold, not to be given away for free.

When you work, taxes are automatically assessed and deducted from you. Just like when you buy various taxed products in the supermarket. In the United States, billions of dollars are spent each year on military purposes. If war surprises us, we all work to arm the country, including all legally employed, religious, anti-war people. People don't want wars – and yet they continue to fuel the machine of war with their taxes.

In this way, everyday human wants and desires, fulfilled through money, become the fuel that powers the system.

Taxes – this money is being taken from you whether you like it or not, for purposes you may never use. Taking from you to give to others. In addition to the taxes collected from you for the purposes you use, perhaps unknowingly, it is nothing new that there are frequent cases of taxpayers' money being spent simply on things that are meaningless.

You pay taxes when you earn money, you pay taxes when you spend money.

People destroy their bodies and then seek help in hospitals, they fight wars for peace, they destroy the environment and then try to save it – taxpayers' money is used to pay for the stupidity of others.

You could say that taxes are money for the desires of others. So the work effort went towards fulfilling the desires of others.

Moreover, what if people decided for themselves whether to deduct taxes from their own salaries – and for what purposes. Then the government could not be blamed for these things from taxes, but the people themselves.

People's financial problems are a hole that cannot be patched – especially when the interest is charged simply out of nothing.

In the machine there is no love for one's neighbor. This is what characterizes many workplace positions. Examples include the positions of officials and even salespeople – because the work they do has a purpose, and anything that prevents the fulfillment of this purpose is ignored or even fought against. Many such jobs show minimal, if not less, empathy for other people: the military, law enforcement officers, bankers, courts.

A machine will never make a mistake – builder of the machine can. A machine error occurs when it performs an action that causes it to miss the purpose of its work, the purpose which it was designed for, the purpose of its builder.

Workers – they only do their job. From cashiers in supermarkets and sellers in shopping malls, through policemen and doctors on duty, to employed guards at Auschwitz and those who held jobs serving the system that killed Jesus.

Many job positions are characterized by passivity towards everything else because the employee is paid for the work entrusted to him and not for other activities, which may include, among others, mercy towards others. Such a person can be the perfect material to build the machine of the system. A completely neutral person does not question anything whether it is good or bad, as an employee he entrusts this issue to the employer.

The servants of those in power do what they are told, and when the rulers change and give commands and orders that are completely opposite to those given by the first ones, the same servants also follow their orders!

There are people who follow the rules of the state, not rules of God. It is not unknown that some of the regulations of the system do not go hand in hand with God's commandments.

If money is valued over goods and products of labor, then money will have value at the expense of the quality of goods, services and even human health or life. If the means of life have a price, it would mean that life has a price, that a person's life is not above money.

> (...) You received free, give free.
>
> Matthew 10:8

Will you sell what God gave for free?
Sometimes I'm not sure how I feel when I see bottled water in markets. To pay money to just drink water. Or you should pay for sticks from the forest as firewood. But you can go further... After all, in the beginning people had free food – all they had to do was take care of the garden. Wouldn't life be less stressful if we returned to that state of affairs without having to worry about eating and drinking – the basic things (which are simply wasted and thrown away in today's economic system) needed by our bodies that we once received for free?

Earth was given to mankind for free – if it is destroyed, it should be restored for free. Will you take money for planting trees? Should the result of planting trees be money and not the planted trees and what they do: food and oxygen, fertile land and a home for animals? If the priority is money, not nature, then the Earth cannot be saved.

If you want to live forever, you must solve problems so that they are solved *once and for all*. When you look at your life, ask yourself if you want to live with these problems forever.

If no one will mess, there will be no need for a cleaner. When everyone has easy access to the Internet (e.g. via smartphones), the work of a teacher will be unnecessary. But when no one has desires, there is no need for jobs that fulfill them.

Also the laws of nations are regulations that provide for the use of money: when you commit a crime, you will either have to pay or go to prison.

Humanity that cannot appreciate the true value of things undoubtedly dooms itself – along with the planet subjected to it – to destruction. Whoever uses money contributes to the continuation of this system based on them.

I have never seen a demonstration against money in the streets, but quite the opposite. In early 2021, global debt stood at 277'000'000'000'000$. The money to cover this debt does not exist.

Forcefully „creating jobs” for no reason, does not make sense. These are artificial and unnecessary jobs created just to make money, which do not bring any valuable goods into circulation. More effort and resources are spent on the creation and existence of this workplace than on the benefits resulting from it. This applies to jobs for ordinary people as well as for the chosen ones – the existence of monarchies and kings in some countries require quite large sums of money to maintain, and yet the problem of governance can be solved in a different way.

When the reason jobs are created is for people to make money, not for machines to do the work, then automation cannot happen.

There are activities in which the current work of one person today has negative consequences for generations in the future. Work such as coal mining, production or sale of substances that endanger health. Every day of such work is a sin against the future of your own children.

There is such an injustice when a person has to pay for a service that has been already done, that did not order. It is common in government institutions, banking, and other places.

Many times you can hear that an entrepreneur is "losing money". “Not gaining” is not “losing.”

There is such injustice when a person has to pay for a service that he did not order. This is common in government institutions, banking and other places.

In the pursuit of money and gold, it is rarely remembered that throughout the universe, wood is certainly rarer than diamonds.

Can mankind live in good conditions without using money? Humanity lived in paradise conditions without using money.

> The worthless gods will completely disappear.
>
> Isaiah 2:18

> The gods that did not make the heavens and the earth
> Will perish from the earth and from under these heavens
>
> Jeremiah 10:11

Free will

What does it mean that the will is free? Free from what? There is no such thing as free will because your will is subject to the law of causation. Your thoughts are subject to Causality.

Your will has a choice. You can only choose from the options you see, from the options that you believe exist and are possible – you choose the option that you believe is possible, you will not choose the option that you do not believe in. The choice is determined because the preferences of the chooser, the choice options the chooser sees, and other causes that will influence the choice – all exist before that choice and create this choice. Wisdom allows you to discover paths of choice, then the choice is greater, or you have a choice at all. In the past, almost no one believed that a person could fly in a machine made of metal, so they didn't even try. People didn't do things that they did not believe in, therefore the human will is subject to Causality. If people do not believe that they can live forever, they will not even try to achieve it. Achieve by changing the world so that people want to live in it. That's why Jesus repeatedly said, "Your faith has healed you."

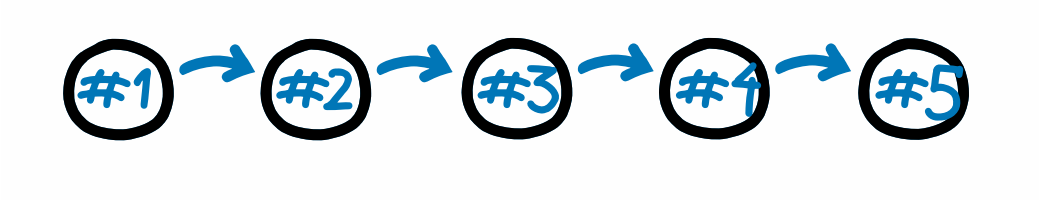
> Faith is the assured expectation of what is hoped for, the evident demonstration of realities that are not seen.
>
> Hebrews 11:1

... often not only waiting but also acting on expected things, which is why no amount of faith alone will make something happen. Belief with action makes something a fact:

> Indeed, just as the body without spirit is dead, so also faith without works is dead.
>
> James 2:26

Faith is a manifestation of what is coming. Someone shoots and you duck to avoid the bullet because you believe it will hit you – an act caused by your belief in an upcoming event told to you by Causality.

Faith comes from God – if I tell you something, you won't believe it, but if you find it out for yourself (for example, through parables), you will believe it. You believe that something is possible when Causality shows you what will happen in the next links of chain of events of the future.



With help of Causality you believe #5 is possible.

Causality – when you need faith, you turn only to it. It illuminates the path to your goal, so you believe that you will reach your goal. A personal god offers nothing but darkness in which man wanders. No one has faith if on one takes it from the source of faith – from Causality.

Faith is the belief in reaching the destination of a journey's road, together with knowledge of that road. Faith can be false when knowledge of the road leading to the destination is false. Hope is the expectation of reaching the destination of a journey's road, without complete knowledge of that road. Causality is the source of faith and hope.

Those who can only see the last link in the chain of causality will only believe in what their physical eyes can see – from what their physical eyes can see they get the strength of their faith. Messengers are sent to them whom they can physically see. Those who can see deeper into the chain of causality do not need to see with physical eyes to believe that something is possible. There is no need for physical messengers to deliver faith by proving something. Whatever miracles you perform to convince them to believe, if they do not believe in logical Causality, they will not believe in your miracles either.

Consciousness is essential to have faith. Causality shows you what will happen in the next links of the chain of future events – then you see these next events – then you are conscious of them coming – then you have faith in them.

“Your faith has healed you” – Jesus did not heal the sick, he caused them to believe and it was their faith that healed them.

A mystery to a man is something he does not believe in. As long as you do not believe in it, it will be a secret to you, incomprehensible.

If you have doubts about whether something is possible, you have to prove it yourself. Then you will gain faith and doubts will disappear.

When you know the reason why faith comes into being – nothing is a great mystery of faith.

Faith is gained through conversation (prayer) with Causality, so faith is not blind following, you cannot have it by persuade yourself, it must be given to you by God. Man cannot gain faith by himself.

> (...) "O faithless generation" (...)
>
> (...) "But if you can do anything, have pity on us and help us"
> Jesus said to him: "That expression, 'If you can'! Why, all things are possible for the one who has faith."
>
> (...) his disciples asked him privately: "Why could we not expel it?" He said to them: "This kind can come out only by prayer."

Mark 9:19, 22-23, 28-29

If you don't have enough fuel, the furnace won't melt the iron; If you don't have enough faith, your intention will fail. If you believe, it can take a very long time; If you don't believe, it will never happen. Faith is the currency that buys actions that you believe you can achieve.

> But looking at the windstorm, he became afraid. And when he started to sink, he cried out: "Lord, save me!" Immediately stretching out his hand, Jesus caught hold of him and said to him: "You with little faith, why did you give way to doubt?"

Matthew 14:30-31

For faith to arise, all doubts must be dispelled[67]. When you hold on to two mutually exclusive teachings, two opposing ideas, then there is doubt as to which of them is true and you cannot follow both paths that run in completely different directions. For faith to arise, one of the parties you follow must fall.

If one has doubts and the object of the doubt cannot be put to the test, then the doubts will never be dispelled and faith will never arise.

67 Matthew 21:21 (...) Truly I say to you, if you have faith and do not doubt, not only will you do what I did to the fig tree, but even if you say to this mountain, 'Be lifted up and thrown into the sea,' it will happen.

Devil tested Job until the Devil's doubts were dispelled. Satan tested Jesus to the limit so that his doubts and all questions were eliminated, and faith emerged based on dispelling doubts evidence – therefore faith (and knowledge) can also enslave – stop a person from achieving their desire, showing that achieving it is impossible, thus stopping them from further attempts to achieve it, from action. Then you believe that something is impossible so you don't do it. This enslaving faith is from Causality which dispels doubts – then God stops a person from fulfilling their desires, imprisons them, stopping them from fulfilling their aspirations.

The assurance from Causality that your action to fulfill your desire will fail – prevents you from doing so – and you do not act. In this way Causality shackles the person from further action, from living – and throws him into the abyss of non-action, of just being, where the fire of unabandoned desire burns the person – a desire that cannot be fulfilled by any deed or activity.

In some truths you cannot believe because their content is not compatible with what you already know or believe, their code is not compatible with your code, either because it is a low-level code that cannot be accepted by the high-level mind, or because it is difficult for the truth to penetrate a mind already contaminated by lies, which interprets it through these untruths. Therefore, faith (in true things) must be given to you.

When man does not talk to Causality to find out what the effect will be, then he must go through it to find out what the effect will be. Then in order to gain faith that something will bring bad effect, it must happen for man to see it and believe that it brings bad effect. Thus it was necessary for many rulers and governments to rise and fall in succession so that man would see, be aware of, and above all believe that they were evil and brought bad effects – because man was not guided by Causality to see these effects immediately, at once, before these governments came into being.

Fear, humility and true belief that Causality is the One True Supreme God is when you see for yourself that Causality rules everything and that it closes so that it cannot be opened, and opens so that it cannot be closed.

In games, the most powerful characters are almost naked, they do not need weapons or protective armor to face the greatest adversities – Jesus always had everything he needed with him.

When all the dominoes are perfectly placed next to each other and when you knock down the first one, do you trust that the last one will fall too?

Pilgrimage is a journey in search of faith – a journey not of the body, but of the mind.

Just as the small DNA code of a mustard plant can become a large tree, so too can a small code of an idea give a large effect. One code of an apple, if given enough time, has the power to feed thousands of people, a small code of a flower can after some time turn an entire meadow green, the code of a virus infects the body and sometimes the code of the body itself, similarly one thought can spread among the masses of people because the code of various teachings and ideas influence the mind and this code works. How can you have faith in the usefulness of this code when you have seen a seed but never seen a full-grown tree? A bad seed will be a bad tree bearing bad fruit, and a good tree will bear good fruit.

If you are forced to do something, you are not doing it of your own will. Or you don't do anything of your own will when you know that for disobedience you will be punished (not a natural consequence without the participation of another person).
Is love for the homeland pure when we are forced to do so?
Is it right to love God if we are under pressure? (Furthermore, the fear of eternal Hell as a place is not right – we are not to be afraid of eternally fiery flames, but of the embers of our conscience for evil deeds[68].)

I go to school even though I don't like the school system, or I go to work even though I know the unequal rules of money, or I follow orders because I see no choice and I am forced by the system or someone else, and the faith in another path is taken away, and the will collapses.

●●●●● They say: "Don't worry, you'll get used to it." You will get used to slavery, oppression and coercion. Do you want to live forever or suffer forever? You can't become one of those people who get used to it. Examples include the inhabitants of China who have become accustomed to their government and its laws, and the inhabitants of Hong Kong who have slowly started to implement those laws for some time and have not come to terms with it. To slowly get used to what you don't want from the beginning. Now you say: "Never!", tomorrow: "It's normal." A person can get used to everything, good or bad, even to what he previously considered inappropriate – because of these people there cannot be a better world because they got used to the old one and accepted this state of affairs, it has been normalized so that they rarely question it, and even when they do, the majority that is used to it puts pressure on the rebel. Under the pressure, over time a person makes more and more compromises until he is absorbed by the system – so he has to go back to the times of his childhood rebellion when he did not make any concessions – a time he does not remember. Getting used to something bad is a terrible thing if there is no force from anywhere to push you back to the right track. You change something when you don't like it, when you get used to something you don't change it. You're used to it, you don't want change, so it definitely won't happen. When you get used to being a slave, you will never be free – getting used to suppression makes one forget about the desire for freedom and the fear of enslavement. You cannot feel anger towards the machinery of the system if you are used to it. In young, unaccustomed people, this anger still burns. Anger that drives action. Without anger towards the system, a person has no power to oppose it – such anger is right because it is justified, because it has its own cause – all emotions and feelings aroused by Causality are just. Like all other emotions and feelings – then a person is not indifferent. When he's not indifferent – then he acts. When he acts – he's alive.

Some people say to suppress your anger or other emotions, but without an outburst of accumulated emotions that are valid, you cannot overcome what caused them in the first place. Those who say to suppress your emotions want to take away your power to act. Hatred, enmity and anger towards evil, injustice and lies must break out, if it doesn't, then this evil will continue. If anger against evil did not erupt, it would be downright abnormal. By suppressing the cause, it makes no effect – then you do not follow the path of Causality. By suppressing emotions, a person does not feel human emotions.

A person who's used to it, who has a habit, does thing that he is used to unconsciously – like a machine, reflexively, without thinking, without realization.

Getting out of habit from something occurs by turning the consciousness's attention against something that was done unconsciously.

A person slowly, over the years, gets used to the system, but getting unused to it very quickly is very painful.

68 Ecclesiastes 9:5; Psalms 146:4; John 11:14; Dead carnal people who are only flesh do not reside anywhere else because what only comes from dust can only go to dust.

People don't do what they don't like. Through habituation and indoctrination from a child's earliest years, and through teaching, the system shapes the human mind to like things that contradict its original programming.

If a person does not deal with what is bothering him sooner, the sooner he will get used to it.

Sometimes even a representative of an animal species gets used to, behaves and imitates representatives of another species.

When a mask is worn, intended to be worn temporarily, when worn long enough it becomes a part of you.

Are resurrected groups of nations that died long ago supposed to get used to the societies that will live in terms of clothing, behavior and customs?

When you break the chain of habit that is inculcated in the offspring, the posterity will not do the evil of the ancestors and will not follow their lies. Ancestors went to war, believed in superstitions, destroyed the environment – posterity did not. “It ends with me.”

Starting from birth, everything a person has is from the outside. The genetic code, food, house, the system in which he later lives, the religion in which he is then raised, the physical factors that affect his body and the information that affects his mind. No wonder that what controls him is from the outside.

> People consider acts more „free” when they involve a person opposing external forces.
> Wikipedia, Free will

- just like Jesus when he was tempted by the Devil for 40 days in the wilderness.

"I stand my ground in the face of the greatest pressures to see if I have my own will."[69]

The system accustoms a small child to itself from the early moments of his life and reaches for his mind. There is no need to change the children God created. The system changes these children to make them more compatible with the system.

Parents do not tell their child what difficulties await him in life in the world of this system because he would never agree to it – but the adult is already used to it because the child died in him. If a child instantly gained an adult body, thus having a child's mind and an adult's body, it would never agree to 8-hour work in a factory – but an "adult", with an "adult" mind and an adult's body, is already trained for such conditions that take ⅓ of a twenty-four-hour day, and sometimes even half, of his life, telling himself things to maintain this state of affairs. And with his time to sleep, he has little time left for himself.

There is the adulthood of the material organism and the "adulthood" of the immaterial mind. Since in different countries there are different age at which "adulthood" is achieved, such "adulthood" is a construct. "Adulthood" of a person is an attitude and behavior according to the laws and morals that the system dictates and being subordinate to it – being accustomed to living in the system.

69 Ephesians 4:14 So we should no longer be children, tossed about as by waves and carried here and there by every wind of teaching (...)

Causality – when you see that it is everywhere, in all its immanence and transcendence, omnibeing, when you see that absolutely everything has its causes and effects, even emotions, people, life, and all constructs, joy and laughter, sadness and pain, desires and aspirations; then the bonds that caused all this to affect you, that bound your heart, are loosened and they don't necessarily have to affect you anymore because you already see the causes behind them so you can control them; then the doubts of your mind disappear because they are dispelled by the very Causality that guides you, and questions full of doubts are dispelled by the answers from Causality – doubt about something, because Causality governs all things, and all the more unwaveringly and decisively you can predict the future and everything; then Causality stops influencing you through all this because you already know all this – Causality controlled all the things that were influencing you – now you control them so they cannot control you, influence you, give you life from the outside because you already have life within itself. Causality leaves and the path becomes absolute.

The will is not free from Causality, but the will can be strong. The will is strong when you make necessity a choice. You have the strongest will when you have unwavering faith that the goal you want to achieve is possible, and if, despite all the worst adversities, you push forward to achieve it. And you achieve it. Such faith (in this goal) comes from Causality, God who cannot lie[70].

Strong will means that the domino piece, despite all pressure, refuses to fall.

Something that has will can always overwhelm something (or someone) that does not have it.

Only the will can oppose another will, not the body. Over the centuries, in various ways, either through torment or oppression, attempts have been made to awaken in man the will that would be able to oppose the will of the greatest evil. Then the domino piece does not fall under the greatest pressures because it is no longer just dust.

Someone can touch your body, change its position, defile it and do whatever they want with it. Someone can "touch" your soul/mind, for example with a blue apple – now your mind has been forced to imagine it. Your mind can also be desecrated and someone can control it and do whatever they want with it. As long as your soul/mind/will is yours, no one can force it to do anything[71]. *Only you can give away your consent*. You will not give up your consent when you are steadfast, you are steadfast when you have faith in the truth of what is on your side and not in the lie (or even the truth!) of the one who touches your mind.

As long as someone has control over your body or spirit, you are no longer responsible for what your body does or what your mind does, *they are no longer yours* – something is yours if you have control over it. Responsibility for an action is when you commit it and know what its true effect will be – not when your actions are based on a pillars of lies.

In court, the judge administers justice by punishing the perpetrator. Meanwhile, what caused this man's will to commit this evil act remains without a judge's verdict and causes other people (consciously or not) to do the same.

Moreover, one cannot judge a man whose main instrument of thought is the most complicated and unknown organ in the universe. You cannot judge what you have not known. Judgment belongs to God: like the reaction of a domino to a block that falls on it, so to the action of one mind there is a reaction of other minds – it is a judgment of a man over another man or a judgment of a system over a guilty person in relation to his law, a judgment of Causality because unconscious dominoes are also subject to it, and the unknowing mind of man, and the system, and its judgments, and the laws of these judgments, because their laws had their cause.

---

70 Numbers 23:19; Titus 1:2

71 Matthew 10:28 And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul (...)

If I have no choice (or I do not see it) regarding an act, I am not responsible for that act. Everything, whether an animal does something without choice, or a thing if it acts without choice, is not responsible for its action – but each action, as a cause, produces a proportional effect.

When I go and I see several paths that I could take, when I have no choice because someone or something is blocking some of the paths, don't blame me if I take the path that is not blocked.

The cause is to blame for the effect. If you are not the cause, you are not responsible for the effect.

As long as these winds of false ideas and teachings blow through this sea of people, people cannot be held accountable for their actions towards this system. If the sea is torn by the wind, it has no will to resist it. One day, this sea will no longer exist – the rivers and the water sources that feed them will dry up.

Free will does not exist because there will always be an answer to the question: "Why are you doing this?" Where free will exists, there is no causality.

There is no free will – there is only action and reaction – of body or mind. Reaction proportional to what the body is or what is in the mind.

The puppet cannot "live" without the threads that control it. Unless it has life within itself.

If the will is not free from the rule of Causality and if everything has its cause and effect, then how can man be the cause of his actions and how can he be guilty of them? A man is guilty of his action only if he acts against the truth, the word of Causality – but that too has its cause – nevertheless, man is guilty of this action because his *action brought about the effect that he knew would happen* and he is guilty of this effect. So it was with Adam, Eve, Judas. In the truth, the word of Causality, one believes unwaveringly – when man acts against it, he is guilty of the effect of his action. If you know that a cause produces a given effect, and if Causality does not move you to produce that cause, and if you do that cause, then you are guilty of the effect you knew about.

Everything in man is subject to Causality, which is why for centuries philosophers, scientists and researchers have had problems defining "free will" and "I". People think that they are the first, isolated cause of their actions, but the truth is that the cause is external because Causality has always existed, before you – therefore the first cause cannot be born within you. Therefore, among other things, the reasons for the behavior of crowds and people can be sought not in themselves, but in the system in which they live, in which they breathe, which influences them, and which builds them. Political, religious or any other system. In ideas and teachings that are held high and people look up to them to be guided by them. When you realize that the cause of your actions is always outside yourself, you are not burdened with the burden of guilt for actions that you consider evil, just as Jesus did not attribute to himself actions that he considered good[72].

Can a robot say, "I"? He whose actions always have an external cause, whose structure, every act, and every thought are the effect of an external cause, cannot say "I" because he has nothing personal in himself that does not have an external cause, he cannot create anything (whether in himself or without) of which nothing external is a constituent.

A person can say, "I" only when he is conscious of his *own* self – but what if that he *owns* is not his? When that property, whether body or mind, and its actions always have their cause from outside (when the actions of body and mind have their cause from outside, then they are controlled by that which is outside) – then that property is not his and he cannot say "I" because he has no control over anything.

72 John 14:10 (...) The things I say to you I do not speak of my own originality, but the Father who remains in union with me is doing his works.

Something that is not yours and that you have no power over and cannot control, cannot be a part of you and you cannot say “I” about it.

Most people accept a reality where their will has a choice, even when they are unaware that it is otherwise. By its very nature, such a system is flawed. That is why it is so important to seek faith in the things we can do, because then our choices increase.

Authorities has power over you when you submit to that power. When you do not want to be subjected to this authority, you must have faith that you have a choice. Without faith in choice, you cannot be free.

Even if a person would like to choose evil, it is the choice that matters – everyone wants to have it. Someone forcing somebody else to do something cannot be good, God did not forbid the fruit from the tree of knowledge – the way to it was open. Little children always ask if someone can do something for them. “Will you play with me?”, “Will you buy this for me?” They never force.

What is a choice? It is realizing what path you will take from the paths you see. The better your eyesight, the more paths you can see[73]. The choice expands the more paths you see. The more eyes you have and the more healthy they are[74], the more roads you see.

What is free will? It is a belief that you can decide, that you can make a decision that is not influenced by anything from outside, that you are free from everything from outside that would change the decision of your will, *or that would create it*. Such thing does not exist

Consciousness

Consciousness is the reception of information (and the belief in its truthfulness) that the person receiving the information can and is able to receive from outside and from within himself. The greater your awareness, the more things can influence you – the higher your level of life. The more things you ignore, the more things do not affect you, the less you react to them – the lower your level of life. Consciousness is an activity because receiving data, stimuli, information and impulses is an activity.

> Consciousness, at its simplest, is sentience or awareness of internal and external existence.
>
> Wikipedia, Consciousness

If you see or feel an external material object, you are conscious of it and it is stored in your mind as internal non-material data. Without this "storing", even for a moment, one cannot be conscious of it.

Consciousness is something that creates a one-way bond, a connection between a person and something, someone else, material or immaterial. When this connection is with something true and real, then what has been connected has an effect on the connected one, an effect. When this connection is with something unreal or false, then what has been connected has no effect. Without an effect, eternity cannot occur.

73 Genesis 3:7, Ezekiel 10:12 and Revelation 4:8
74 Revelation 3:18 (...) and eyesalve to rub in your eyes so that you may see.

Only the information we receive, that we are aware of, we are able to change. Only what you are aware of you can control. When you are not aware of your body, you do not feel the signals it sends, you cannot control it, because your attention is focused on something else. Most old people slowly lose awareness of their body, being more aware of their thoughts and constantly direct their awareness more towards them than towards feeling, they think too much and feel too little, and what cannot be conscious cannot be changed or fixed, therefore they cannot respond to their body's signals. The opposite is true for young children: the thing that attracts their attention is always outside their body because there is nothing in their mind to attract the attention of their consciousness, the cause always knocks from outside – in this way their consciousness can focus one hundred percent on the outside cause because nothing draws their attention to the inside. It is similar with cats: the attention of their senses and consciousness is focused on external factors and they can react to them in fractions of a second. An adult may have trouble focusing his awareness on what is outside if the cause that draws his attention is inside him, in his mind. Therefore, being in the "here and now" benefits the body because the body cannot go beyond the "here and now", the mind can.

It often happens that a person ignores signals from the physical sphere because he listens more to signals from the spiritual sphere. This leads to the destruction of the body. The signal that is pain (whether physical or otherwise) allows us to be aware of the destination it comes from, ignoring it will not help in repairing the defect, constantly ignoring and denying its existence causes us to get used to it and this leads to the disappearance of its power until finally to complete insensitivity, in this way it is impossible to repair a defect that does not make itself felt. Ignoring signals from an area means you are not part of the area. The one who does not receive stimuli, signals, information from reality, loses contact with reality, with the truth – loses contact with God because his word is truth, and whoever loses contact with the source of life, dies.

The signals and impulses of one's own body are low-level signals, and if a high-level being cannot receive them, he destroys his body. A newborn is a low-level organism, over time high-level constructs begin to appear in his mind through learning from others.

Causality is the source of consciousness. When you are humble before Causality, when you do not cover your eyes before cause and effect, then you see what Causality controls and you are aware of it. Abandoning Causality makes a person not to see causes and effects and therefore – be not aware of them. Abandoning Causality makes a person not to see what Causality controls – in this way a person does not see with the eyes of his mind the things that are controlled by Causality, the real things that exist on Earth – and a person does not see the world around him, the world built of things that are controlled by Causality, and Causality rules all things – consciousness becomes dulled and sometimes simply ceases to exist. Sight, mind and senses become dulled – the instruments of consciousness that Causality creates. When a person abandons Causality then he is not aware of the cause-effect relationships between things, objects that are affected by causes and things, persons that produce effects, consequences. A person breaks his bond with Causality – in this way he breaks his bond with things that exist in the real world ruled by Causality – and is not aware of them. Man does not see how something will work, he is not able to predict the behavior of something, he is not aware of how something/someone will act and he cannot be conscious of the path that something will take. When man does not look at Causality then he loses his awareness – he does not look at Causality when the desires and aspirations of this man are more important to him than the "desire", "behavior", action of Causality – when man runs after his desires without taking into account the "desires", "decisions" and actions of Causality.

Only the present exists. When you direct the attention of your consciousness to a non-existent future or past, then you are not living in an existing present.

By rejecting the truth, one rejects the world (area) in which this truth is (and one perishes away from it).

It is hard to blame old people who have a dulled consciousness when their consciousness cannot bear the burdens that the world of the system places upon them – especially when they are weakened by the lies of the system – lies that distract them from the truth that gives strength.

The eyes allow to perceive images. The nose allows to perceive smells. The ears allow to perceive sounds. Receptors on the skin feel when something touches them. The mind allows us to receive information and high-level abstract constructs. The more receivers and receptors you have that allow you to receive data, the greater your awareness – and the greater your interaction with the area from which this data comes – and the greater the interaction with this area, the greater the life in this area.

If data, signals and impulses come to you from a certain area and you respond to them, then you are associated with that area. A newly conceived newborn is connected with the world around him – his body is bombarded with impulses to which he responds. If you receive no impulses from absolutely any source (or you reject all impulses without reacting to them) – you are dead.

By denying impulses of your body, you are denying what makes you human – but animals also display some of these bodily impulses. By denying impulses of your spirit, you deny what makes you in God's image.

Whoever does not ignore the signals of the body (or spirit) will have a healthy body (or mind).

Have a healthy body, have a healthy mind – if you want to enjoy the world, you must have something to enjoy the world, all the organs that receive external impulses.

By separating yourself from the impulses in your environment, you separate yourself from that environment; when you separate yourself from the physical world, you separate yourself from life in the physical, material world. By separating yourself from the world with *lies*, you separate yourself from life in the *real* world. After all, the dead one is completely separated – it does not receive any impulses or information.

When you are sensitive, you feel more. So don't desensitize yourself if you don't want to feel anything. Something that doesn't feel anything can't interact with anything because it doesn't receive the signals it sends. I react because I see, hear, feel, think, anticipating an upcoming event and thus can react to it before it takes effect.

Only one who is sensitive can be influenced by Causality, therefore only one who is sensitive can have the holy spirit – the power from God that drives one to action. Only he who exposes himself to causes, makes Causality to act upon him and produces an effect.

Many people abandon their sensitivity, emotionality and delicacy in order to survive in the difficult, bad conditions surrounding them. It never makes these conditions change. Conditions change when you react to them, you react to them when you are sensitive to them. They desensitize themselves in order to survive – the sensitive eyes of the mind, fully open in a child, close. Good, innocent, childish values are lost in an adult because he gets rid of them in order to survive in the "adult" world of the system – habituation begins.

Sensitive people feel what insensitive people cannot.

The insensitive ones are waiting for something to move them – to life.

One who walks in fire is not afraid of being burned – and becomes less sensitive to it.

You don't feel pain (and other feelings) when you turn your consciousness away from its source.

When you do not have your own desires, you are more sensitive to external impulses, you see clearly because your eyes are not clouded by your desires. The less you have inside, the more sensitive you are to what's outside of you.

Dealing with what is unreal distracts you from what is real. By delving into what is unreal, you live in what is unreal and what is real cannot reach you or affect you. When you live in the world of your own dreams, you cannot live in the real world. Dealing with unreal things will not change the reality in which real people live. Constant thinking causes you to lose contact with the external, real, material world and to lock yourself in your own interior. And yet, from the earliest moments of a newborn, what is outside shapes his thoughts and interior (since there is nothing inside yet, his consciousness has nothing to focus on), so his attention and awareness are focused on what is outside.

In order not to lose contact with reality, you must recognize the truth that this reality speaks about.

When a person distracts his consciousness from the lie, it allows him to focus on real things. Since the dawn of time, man has been searching for what does not exist: a personal god. On the object of this lie, over the centuries, countless generations of people have spent their energy, the strength of their muscles, the strength of their spirit, money, blood, sweat and tears, and their lives. In chasing something that doesn't exist, you will end up dead in your tracks looking for something that isn't there. Concentrating your inner forces and spending them on false values will cause the forces that were intended for you to disappear. Your true strength disappears into nothingness when it is spent on someone who does not exist.

God is holy, separated from everything that is false and untrue; Causality governs everyone and everything that is true and real, Causality cannot rule something that is false and unreal – the closer you are to God, the closer you must be to truth and reality, the closer you come to God, the more its presence destroys what is false in you, all lies and untrue constructs – whatever they are – ideas, beliefs, religions. Causality simply burns a man full of falsehood, hypocrisy and lies who approaches it! Some people talked to God, some were in his close presence[75].

If a single-core processor processes received information, it does not accept new information until it has processed the received information. It is similar with humans: there is no multitasking – there is only sudden switching between them: consciousness does one thing at a time – the remaining things, if they are done at the same time, are done unconsciously, subconsciously, machine-wise, because the body (and therefore also the material brain) is a machine. Therefore, you cannot use your consciousness to process two signals at the same time: the signals that your body sends and the signals of your spirit, mind (thoughts, dreams, fantasies, thinking and worrying about something). You can't focus when you constantly switch between signals that come from inside, from your mind, and signals that come from outside. If you are constantly concerned with signals from your spiritual realm, you cannot receive signals from your bodily realm. Such a person lives in the world of his own dreams. Constantly engaging your consciousness in thinking tires the body.

When you occupy your mind (or body) with something, external factors cannot properly affect it and are drowned out. Mute your mind to receive them better. When you're constantly making noise, it's hard to hear what someone is saying to you from outside. Turn your consciousness away from the former to better perceive the latter.

75 Psalm 15:1-2 O, Jehovah, who may be a guest in your tent? Who may reside in your holy mountain?
The one who is walking faultlessly, practicing what is right and speaking the truth in his heart.

Man does not live by food alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of Jehovah.
"Your word is truth" – man lives the truth.
Every real sound that comes to him.
Every real image his eyes see.
Every real piece of information his mind sees.
If these things come to you, there is a reaction to them from you – this is a higher level of life, and then you are alive *because you are reacting to the cause* of whatever it is: sound, image, or something else. The dead one doesn't react to it.

From the first seconds of his life, man receives signals from his surroundings and his body. How do you want to stay in your body if you don't receive your body's signals? Some religious people reject these bodily signals (and call them impure), they are blocking them. They listen to the signals of the mind – these drown out the signals of the body. A corporeal person receives his corporeal, material signals. A spiritual person receives spiritual, immaterial signals that reach his mind. This is their treasure. Where your treasure is, there you will be too[76].

Sometimes bodily signals drown out spiritual signals (and vice versa). When you destroy the part of you that blocks and prevents spiritual signals from reaching you, you will see them more clearly[77] and perceive them better.

When a person is dead, he cannot see, hear, feel, speak or think. A living man who does not see certain things, looks away from them because he does not want to see them, does not hear things, covers his ears from them because he does not want to hear them, does not speak because he is afraid and his tongue is tied, does not think because it will be no use – when certain things are not used, they stop functioning, until they stop working completely. If you do not allow external signals to affect you, then you will not affect those signals back – if you do not allow external signals to affect your mind, then your mind will not affect the body (so that the body can respond to the signals again). You got life from the outside and you keep getting it from the outside.

You can consciously receive signals from only one source at a time. You either receive signals from the physical world or from the spiritual (mind) realm. This is why, among other things, dreams are possible: consciousness does not receive signals from the body or from outside the body, but instead receives signals from the mind itself.

When your consciousness stops caring about one thing, it allows it to be free from that thing and can focus on others. It is similar with a person who has lost one of his senses, this causes the remaining ones to become sharper because the attention and focus of consciousness have been transferred to them, the consciousness can no longer focus on something that don't exist anymore.

> Jesus said to them: „If you were blind, you would have no sin. But now you say, 'We see' Your sin remains".
>
> John 9:41, see also John 15:22 and Hebrews 10:26

Awareness of something combined with calculating and analyzing this something is concentration on this something.

Calculations cost energy, so concentrating on something causes energy to be spent on it (that's why during sleep a person doesn't concentrate on anything and regenerates his strength).

If you have a leg, ears, eyes or any other part of your body, you can concentrate on it. When you are only a body, you can only be aware of your body and concentrate on it – then the forces are spent only on this body and the body is full of strength, which is why small children are full of strength.

76 Luke 12:34
77 See the destruction of Job's body, the fast of Moses, the fast of Jesus.

He, who does not think, devotes all his energy to the body, not the mind.

When you have a science, an idea, you can concentrate on it – then you focus on what is immaterial at the expense of what is material (your body) because you can be aware of one thing at a time.

When you lose your sight or hearing, your concentration on those things disappears and you can redirect the energy you were spending on them to other things by focusing on them.

When what is immaterial in you is lost – the false teaching, the bad idea – then you can focus on what is left – your material body. In this way, you redirect your energy that you spent on what is not true into what is true.

Spending energy on a false idea will mean that it will not bring true results and the effort and power put into it will be wasted.

A small child devotes his strength only to his body, and all the strength goes to the body, and the body is full of strength. An adult who has a false teaching, an idea, spends his strength on this idea and these forces are lost and the body is not at full strength because they are spent on this lie. It's like someone burying a plastic block in the ground and telling you that it will grow into a fruit tree if you water it – your strength are gone.

When people will stop focusing on the ideas and teachings that are high and in the mind of man, then the ideas will be thrown out of the mind of man and man will stop focusing on them, then he will concentrate on what is left – his material body.

That is why it is so important to whiten with truth and cleanse Heaven of these impurities and exalted lies so that they do not strip the body of its strength.

When it will be whitened with truth from these immaterial, false teachings and ideas, then people will focus on what is material and will not spend their strength on immaterial lies, but will redirect their forces to what is material – and the material resurrection of bodies will be possible.

If you do not allow sadness, pain, depression, grief, torment into you and do not allow them to affect you, there will be no reaction to them on your part. If you run away from this cause, it will not give its effect. Pain and sadness have a cause, as long as it exists, they will keep knocking on your door – when you take care of their cause, they will go away.

Suffering moves people the most. Yours or others. Not the “Spark of the Gods” – joy[78].

> After looking around at them with indignation, being thoroughly grieved at the insensibility of their hearts (...)
>
> Mark 3:5

Pain and suffering make the greatest progress in human life[79].

> We think too much and feel to little.
>
> Charlie Chaplin, „Dictator”

78 Ecclesiastes 2:2 „(...) And about pleasure: ‚What use is it?’”

79 Genesis 2:18 (...) It is not good for the man to continue to be alone (...);

Mark 13:19 for those days will be days of a tribulation such as has not occured from the beginning of the creation that God created until that time, and will not occur again.

When there is a lack of empathy, you cannot feel what others feel, empathy can no longer move you because it is no longer there. If for some reason he embezzles it and does not allow himself to be guided by it while it is still there, it leads to its disappearance. When it is no longer there, it gives us the opportunity to do things that are completely opposite and contrary to what empathy and compassion would lead us to do. This is how evil can be born in a person. Don't let the evil outside you determine whether there is evil inside you.

Empathy is something that was created in man. It may be destroyed. Just like the laws of love in young children that have been engraved in their hearts from birth – they can be destroyed. Man does not hate evil of his own will, but his good heart, which has not been imbued with evil, cannot endure it.

> Better is distress than laughter, for the sadness of the face makes the heart better.
>
> Ecclesiastes 7:3

The more body you have, the more pain you can experience.
The more spirit you have, the more pain you can experience.
You react to this pain or become insensitive – less alive.

A material organism cannot experience suffering without a mind, therefore suffering is a state of mind. The evil in man is not in the body, the physical hand itself does not pull the trigger of the gun, but in the mind, therefore the evil in the mind cannot be removed without suffering because man is both the sculptor of his mind and the sculpture that feels the sculptor's chisel – the human body is sculpted in a similar way, without pain it is impossible. There is no other way to recovery except through suffering because the disease has become a part of you. Data on a computer disk changes the physical structure of the disk, data in the human brain changes the physical structure of that part of the body (neuroplasticity), which in turn changes the rest of the body, and the body changes its surroundings. Therefore, if you can change your mind, you can change your body.

Suffering destroys the evil in man, so "do not kill" – let them suffer. The path from evil to good runs nowhere else but through pain and suffering.

Suffering creates a connection between the sufferer and the cause of suffering. When a newborn baby is born, his empty mind takes possession of his body. As the girl's body changes in pain, she takes possession of the changed body. Since man began to decide for himself what is good and what is bad, pain has been considered a bad thing by most people.

Anyone who wants to break free from addiction must suffer; Whoever wants to have a sculpted body must suffer; When a newborn takes its first breaths, it suffers, but without this suffering it will not continue to live.

There are people who deliberately deny themselves happiness and do not stimulate the production of endorphins to stimulate their life and activity.

“What I offer is suffering of body and mind” – without this there will be no healing of body and mind.

Life begins in suffering; the spirit of man arises in suffering and anguish – there is no other place in which the mind of man can arise. When you do not run away from the factors causing suffering that fall on you and you face them, the human spirit is built, you are no longer just a body and you are something more.

Life (especially high-level ones) begins in suffering (of its spirit). When a newborn baby (its mind) begins life, all you can hear is its scream. The more pain (and other impulses) you can receive (from places available to you where they come from), the more you are. When you can perceive pain (or other impulses) from a hand, you have a hand. When you can perceive another person's pain (or other impulses), you go beyond your body, you are more. It can be said that through suffering the human spirit is created. Pain and suffering enliven man – those who do not feel them are insensitive – it's another step to a dead person who doesn't feel anything.

When you are aware of something more than what is material, you are more than that matter. When you are aware of something more than your body, you are more than this body.

> Happy are those conscious of their spiritual need, since the Kingdon of the heavens belongs to them.
>
> Matthew 5:3

Those who see and hear react to what they see and hear.
Those who do not want to see or hear do not react to what they would see and hear.
Those who want to change the world do not shut their ears to its cry for help and react.

Colors are for those who see. Sounds are for the one who hears. Some things are for those who can receive them with their consciousness – no one will give them to you if you are not able to appreciate them. Man does not do anything without a reason, but neither does an angel do anything without a reason – messengers are sent to those who are worthy, who can see what is shown to them.

Cherubim were depicted with lots of eyes as beings with higher consciousness. It is written about Adam and Eve that "their eyes were opened" and "they began to *realize* that they were naked." Instead of the word "consciousness," this word is presented in the Bible in this way.

> Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized that they were naked. (...)
>
> Genesis 3:7 see also Matthew 13:13-15

When you have physical ears and eyes, you see and hear material persons and things and are aware of them; "Their eyes were opened" – and they could see immaterial things, with the eyes of their mind and be aware of them.

Just as a man rests by closing his eyes when he goes to sleep, similarly he rests by closing the eyes of his mind to rest. The body rests best when its mind is not tormented by teachings, ideas and what's immaterial.

When you look away from something, you are not aware of it and you allow it to do what it wants. When you look away from what is going on in your mind, you are not aware of it and you are allowing it to do what it wants in your mind.

A dog sees the world differently. The dragonfly sees the world differently because it can receive impulses and data from it through the receptors it has. Man sees and perceives the world differently because he has different receivers and receptors. We see things (are aware of them) by what we are. When a person is stuck in a lie[80], he cannot see things as they really are. There is nothing in the mind of a small child – he can perceive the world in an undeceived way.

Celestial beings cannot be influenced by material factors and impulses – unless they become human. Earthly man was not influenced by factors, data and impulses invisible to him – until his eyes opened and he saw them, and he became like those in heaven.

80 Psalms 15:2 (...) speakimg the truth in his heart

Original sin

Sin is an act, disobedience to an order, prohibition, law, commandment, the word of God or the law of the state, therefore one can sin against God, man, country, against the law of the nation, against the laws that govern the environment, against the principles that govern one's own body (or mind). When you sin, it gives you unwanted consequences that are bad from your point of view. When you commit an act and there are no consequences that are bad from your point of view, it is not a sin.

An action is a sin against someone/something if that action takes you away from the desire (your goal) that that someone/something provides. An act is a sin that distracts you from the goal of your desire.

When you sin against Causality, it will not give you an effect. The effect you want, your desire, your goal.

Sin is the miss of the goal of your desire. He, who desires nothing, cannot sin.

When you sin against a law, a prohibition, a word, a commandment, you *miss the purpose* of the commandment.

When there is no law against which to sin – there is no sin.

Man has sinned against the law and is a sinner, he pays for his sin by suffering the consequences. But when this law is abolished and no longer exists, that same man is no longer a sinner – he is released from the burden of his sin, which no longer exists, and the consequences of his sin are removed. The various laws of nations may be abolished, but the divine law of cause and effect is never abolished because if it were abolished, everything it gives would be abolished, including life – therefore he who sins against Causality sins against his own life. When the mind sins against the commandments, the mind dies because the commandments within it die.

Sin is an act that interrupts walking along the path of causality.

When a person sins (that is: he does an act that Causality warned him about) – this causes him to cover himself (his body or his mind) from reality because he is ashamed of what he has done and does not want anyone else to know about it, thus running away from reality (from the truth which is the word of God and he does not want to acknowledge reality) – then this reality does not affect him, does not sculpt him, does not provide him with impulses – this causes this reality not to stimulate him to live – this causes a person to stop living and die.

No life form less than a human can sin because it has no possibility to sin.

No animal is as wise as man, and yet no animal can sin – so wisdom does not protect against sin. Obedience to Causality protects against sin.

Only the sinner bears the consequences of his sin. Although in a sinful act the attacking sinner attacks the body of the person being attacked, he cannot harm his mind[81].

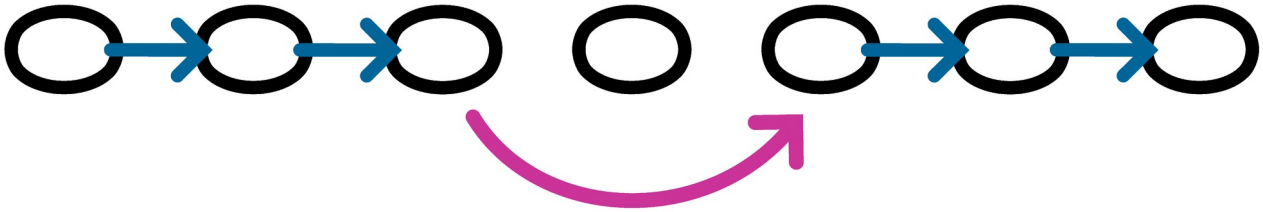
When sin as an act, disobedience to the word of God – when you already have faith in the truth of the word of Causality and yet you do not listen to it – the punishment, from Causality, for disobeying it, is the consequence of this act, this sin: do not do something, because when you do it, you will receive unwanted consequences.

81 Matthew 10:28 And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul(...)

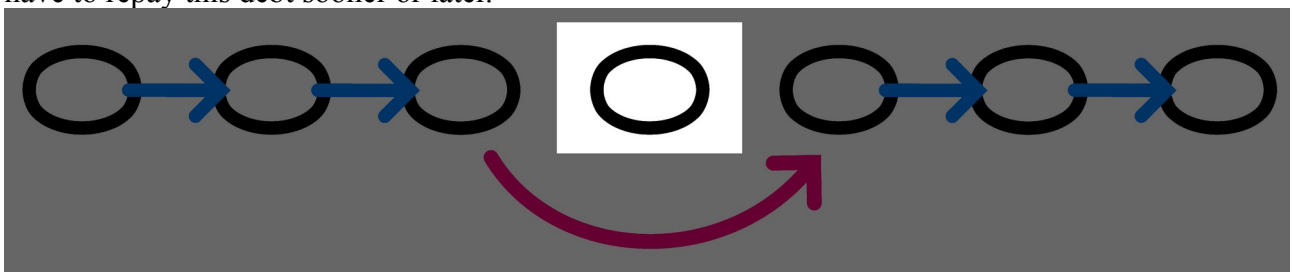
All people have sinned because all don't listen to Causality – no one recognizes what Causality says – that is, the truth, reality – so they will not live in the world of reality.

When considering any sin, you should ask yourself, "Why is this specific sin bad?" And if it isn't, does this sin do anything bad to me or anyone else? If this sin doesn't do anything bad to me or others, then it's not a sin, even if it says somewhere that it is. If a sin is breaking the law, then this sin is against man, because the law was created for man's sake – and can be erased for man's sake.

You sin when you do not follow the chain of causality, step by step, you do not follow the chain of causality when you do not listen to Causality (this was the case with the first humans when the goal in the chain of causality was eternal life):



This is a sin, which is missing the target. It generates debt. This debt is that missed link, step that was not taken or the act that was supposed to be refrained from and that caused trouble. You will have to repay this debt sooner or later.

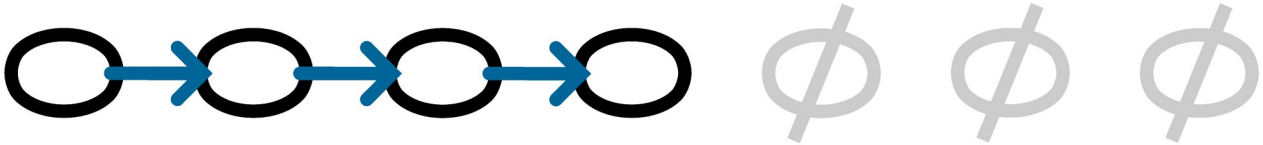


A missed step becomes debt.

This debt may remain the same or it may accumulate as the effects of this omitted step increase, and the consequences become a cause that produces further consequences, and so on...

When this happens, the final goal will be incomplete or not achieved at all.

For this sin, the death of the steps you took after incurring this debt awaits you – until you go back and take this missed step – no matter how many of your actions, without coverage, will be destroyed, will die: it can be material goods, your body or even your mind.



Death, the destruction of these things because their constructive cause was incomplete.

The things that humanity is working on will be destroyed until they step back and repay their debt. Many of things they currently own are in debt.

Example #1:
You are building a house: you draw a project → lay the foundations → skip the electrical, sewage or heating installation → carry out finishing works, paint the walls → bring in furniture and other things. The final goal is not 100% achieved. It is true that your creation does not have to be demolished (as would be the case if the foundations of the building were omitted), but this is not the final intended goal.

Example #2:
“The Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world” (John 1:29). Jesus removed humanity's debt when it was incurred by tasting the fruit of the tree of wisdom, knowing good and bad – then the final goal of people was not achieved, eternal life. The proof of Jesus' debt repayment for humanity is his eternal life.

Jesus bore people's sins because for him they were light, because they were meaningless constructs for him, and because he had no desires of his own that would be an additional burden that would slow him down. Something that weighs nothing is easy to carry. Only he, who has no desires of his own, can bear the sins of others.

A debt is only repaid when the consequences of that debt are repaid. Sin is removed and forgiven only when the effects of sin are eliminated.

To repay humanity's debt against Causality means to repay the effect of this debt, this sin. The result of this debt is the impossibility of taking the fruit from the tree of life that was in Paradise, from which humanity was expelled. Jesus had paradise conditions in his mind, conditions in which man wants to stay and in which he wants to live – so it is a Paradise where you can find the tree of eternal life, take its fruit and live forever.

Only someone who is outside (the area) the problem and not part of the problem, can fix the problem. When you put everyone's debt on one person and that person dies (disappearing from that area) – the debt will disappear (and that area and everything in it will be free from debt).

Only people can sin against God because only people can ask questions to which Causality answers and, knowing the truth, one can act against him (Adam acted against God's prohibition knowing what would happen if he broke this prohibition).

Original sin is the sin of the first people.

The consequence of original sin is:

- Knowing good and bad – arbitrarily judging what is good and what is bad for me (thereby ignoring what is good and what is bad according to what Causality says) and building the future accordingly. According to your criteria of good and bad, you see the future you want to build;
- Death.

Sin itself is not passed on to offspring, the consequence of sin is passed on to offspring. The consequence passes from body to body and from mind to mind of the offspring. The body transmits the tainted, altered code to its offspring, the mind transmits lies to its offspring.

The baking tray is imperfect if it has been dented. The body is imperfect if the code that builds it has been broken. The mind works incorrectly if it is exposed to a lie that it takes into account in its thoughts;
The baking tray stays dented until someone straightens it. The body is healed if someone fixes its code. The mind begins to function properly if someone causes it to come out of a lie;
Baking tray cannot repair itself. The body cannot heal itself. The mind itself cannot believe.

According to what a man considers good and evil, according to this his actions are. For example: Adam and Eve ate the fruit of wisdom because they thought it was good, they thought it was good because they thought they would be as wise as God – but they did not eat before this fruit out of fear of the death that God had warned them about.

Cause of death – either something was given to you that causes your death, or something was taken away from you (or you gave it yourself) that causes you to live eternally. Wisdom of good and evil was given to you, so in order to live eternally it must be taken back from you. It is not up to you to decide what is good and what is bad, you are to be guided by Causality in this regard. And this knowledge is in your mind, so its death will be the death of a part of you. Contact with God has been taken away from you. You cannot talk to Causality about true things if there is an untrue lie in your mind – and based on this untruth you want to calculate the true outcome.

Death is the result of sin, but animals and plants die even though they have not sinned. So it's about the death of a person's mind, not the body – the body dies along with the mind.

Whether it is the fruit of knowledge or anything else, what you take yourself and are not given to you by God, you will have to give back[82].

Knowledge without the need for it is unnecessary.
Knowledge that will hurt you is dangerous[83].

There are things that only God can bear – man should not touch them so that nothing bad happens to him.

Since Causality is absolutely just, the actions of the first humans produced consequences, which in turn produced further effects, which then produced further effects, and so on:

♦ Shame.

> Finally he (Adam) said:
> "I heard your voice in the garden, but I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid myself".
> At that he (God) said:
> "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree from which I commanded you not to eat?"

Genesis 3:10,11

No animal is ashamed of its body – in this regard man has fallen lower than animals. In some regions of the world, women completely covered their bodies from head to toe (burqa). Man is supposed to be free, as he was created, and what is supposed to protect humanity from rape are not physical walls, but love for other people, which is supposed to be greater than other instincts that God placed in man. Man has the right to such freedom because it was given to him not by another man or government but by God, and he is free to use it or not.

All instincts that make animals behave in various ways cannot be evil because they were given to them by God. All instincts and desires placed by God in man cannot be evil. Love, instincts and what has been put into the human body by God cannot be evil. Love, empathy, desires and what has been put into the human mind by God cannot be evil. When one acts against what has been put into man's mind by God, sins against it, then what has been put into man's body remains and nothing can stop the instincts of the flesh.

There are tribes where being naked every day is nothing strange, among them one clothed person is something unusual. There are societies where wearing clothes every day is the norm, one naked person among them is something abnormal. What is moral in one culture may turn out to be immoral for other cultures – simply the culture in which a person is born – he accepts it by getting used to it or rejects it.

---

82 Matthew 7:7-8 Keep on asking, and it will be given you; keep on seeking, and you will find; (...)
83 2 Peter 2:21 It would have been better for them not to have accurately known the path of righteousness than after knowing it to turn away from the holy commandment they had received.

“Wearing clothes is civilized and moral.” Civilization and morality are not something material – they are manifested not through the body or clothes but through the mind and behavior. Morality is a construct that is manifested even in the animal world. Decency and dignity are not achieved through clothes.

There are two people: a scantily clad (or even naked) person and a clothed man. A clothed man is irritated by the sight of such a person and wants the former to be covered with clothes. There are two completely opposite desires here. Should a scantily clad person put on more clothes, thereby limiting his own freedom? Which person has a problem here? Whoever has a problem should act. You don't have it, they have it.

> But I say to you that everyone who keeps on looking at a woman so as to have a passion for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.
> If, now, your right eye is making you stumble, tear it out and throw it away from you. For it is better for you to lose one of your members than for your whole body to be pitched into Gehenna.

Matthew 5:28,29

You can commit adultery only when you leave the marital bed to be in another one. But he who does not have the marriage bed is free. Just like you can betray someone (a friend, your homeland, your god) only if you are connected with him in some way.

Adam, Eve, the apostles[84], Jesus and even little children are not ashamed of their bodies. Did this make Adam, while being naked, behave immorally and without dignity? Not all nudity goes hand in hand with sexuality, just as love is not sex or even bodily contact – a physical person shows love differently, a spiritual person shows love differently. There are already some places (for example, nudist beaches or saunas) where you can feel comfortable and free without clothes.

Being naked has the best effects on the body because then the body is influenced by the most factors and these factors sculpt the body (just like non-material factors, information, sculpt the mind).

No one would be scandalized if a small, naked child walked through the middle of the city, but if an adult did it, the reactions would be different. Why? You are ashamed of what is damaged and others do not want to see it – whether it is body or mind. When something is damaged, disgusting, ugly you cover it; when something is beautiful and good, you are not ashamed of it. Shall man cover the glory of God? – Unless he destroyed that glory.

Other organisms on Earth do not have problems with sexual arousal because the cause of their arousal is never their own will, as is often the case with humans. It is no secret that a person can control his body only with his thoughts. If the destructive forces are greater than the repairing forces, the thing will eventually break. Muscles, brain, virginity, sexual organs – penis and testicles hang unnaturally, the labia and the hole that someone constantly uses loosen, widen and deteriorate. Constant arousal not only destroys them but also affects other organs related to them: the circulatory system throughout the body, enlarging veins and arteries, thus leading to blood transport disorders, which in combination with poor nutrition (sugar, nicotine, alcohol...) causes the skin (deprived of some of the nutrients that are transported by the blood) to waste away like old people's. The body (and mind) functions properly thanks to the "will" of Causality. You disturb it if your will is greater than God's "will". By following their will, they simply destroyed their body and abandoned the only source through which it could be repaired.

84 John 21:7 (...) Now Simon Pether, on hearing that it was the Lord, put on his outer garment, for he was naked, and plunged into the sea

The use and exploitation of things involves their wear and tear – if the destructive forces are greater than the repairing forces, the thing will eventually break. When a sponge is destroyed, the spaces in it become too large to hold water. The body is not consistent. The fruit is thicc when it does not release juices. The tree has compacted fruit because the reason for the life it develops is in itself – just as Jesus gave others the healing (and faith) so that they would have health in themselves – "Your faith has healed you." Animals have sex because it is the right time – not because of their own will and desires, but because of an external reason, because of external conditions favorable to it. Human can desire arousal and sex of his own will. Something matures, grows and remains healthy when it is subject to Causality and not to human will.

Arousal and sex are part of the divine, bodily code (DNA) of man – it is okay if this code is performed. It's ok if another divine code causes the first one not to be executed[85].

Someone who does not become aroused cannot influence his reproductive organs – and therefore cannot destroy them. Little children don't get aroused, they can't. This body maturation code has not yet been activated in them.

People dress in order not to arouse sexual attraction in others, but a person who does so for this reason must have an idea about it, must experience it himself, so young children do not dress for this reason because they themselves have no idea about it – they find sexual actions disgusting, suggestive activities such as kissing make them look away from it; they do not hug the opposite sex because of the desire of the flesh, but because of love that is not carnal.

If you destroy your body, you don't want anyone to see it. If you destroy your mind, you don't want anyone to look into it. If you do evil, you want it to remain in darkness.

How do animals 'consent' to sex without knowing human language? They let each other know through their behavior.

In schools, there is sexual education – one acquires knowledge of how to do it. This knowledge is taught in order to enforce appropriate sexual behavior (protection, restraint) that is adapted to the functioning of a system that is not able to provide the means for the development of all children that would be born to parents whose material body has not been limited by immaterial teachings. Causality makes sexual drive in a person (who does not have to learn about sex) and creates good conditions for offspring and thus – for having sex. Then Causality provides the means to guarantee the appropriate development of this offspring. When all the causes are there, then they generate all the effects and none is missing. The means to guarantee the appropriate development of children should exist before the sex that creates these children. If these means are not there, the system that governs these people has failed. The system of nature, the ecosystem, does not always provide the means for animal offspring when this offspring comes into the world to parents who have no knowledge of sex but do it naturally, according to the programmed code. When a person does this naturally, without having been taught about it, then he has real pleasure and joy in knowing the unknown, like the ignorant and uneducated little children.

Sex is a action of the body. Intellectual instructions on how to have in sex, which is an activity not performed by the mind, are weird, ridiculous and inappropriate. If reproduction were a mental activity, humans would be created in laboratory tubes.

85 Luke 20:35 (...) neither marry nor are given in marriage

Adam and Eve did not learn from animals how to have sex, but they did it naturally when the time came, when the part of body's code (DNA) responsible for reproduction was activated, when the environmental conditions were right, when the desire aroused by Causality appeared. The system's teachings about sex distort the natural sexual behavior of man because for the multitude of children who would be born through the original natural instincts of man, there would not be enough systemic goods and resources – infants would die similarly to the animal world (which can even be observed today in poor countries and places where there are no means for the development of offspring, and yet part of the human sexual code is executed because it is not limited by the code of the mind which does not exist). Today's man who has knowledge about sex from various sources cannot have sex fully naturally in his youth when it's time for it, but is forced to adapt to the system – otherwise he will have to suffer in toil to obtain the means for the life and development of the child (the means, the resources that the system limits so that they have monetary value). The man of the system behaves according to the system's code, its ideas, teachings, constructs that often distort his natural activities created by God and do not allow him to fulfill the innate desires aroused by Causality. By teaching about these things in schools, by parents, on the internet, this innocent joy of discovering for the first time is taken away from a person. The knowledge gained about the known stops the joy of knowing the unknown.

Only a being with a mind can feel shame. He can only feel it towards another being with a mind. One can be ashamed of one's body as well as of one's actions and thoughts that one does not want to show to others – that is why there is shame of the body and shame (and nudity) of the human spirit, mind. One is ashamed because one does not want the other person to react – something that one has the desire not to happen. Shame can be shown by domesticated animals who feel that they have done wrong against their owners.

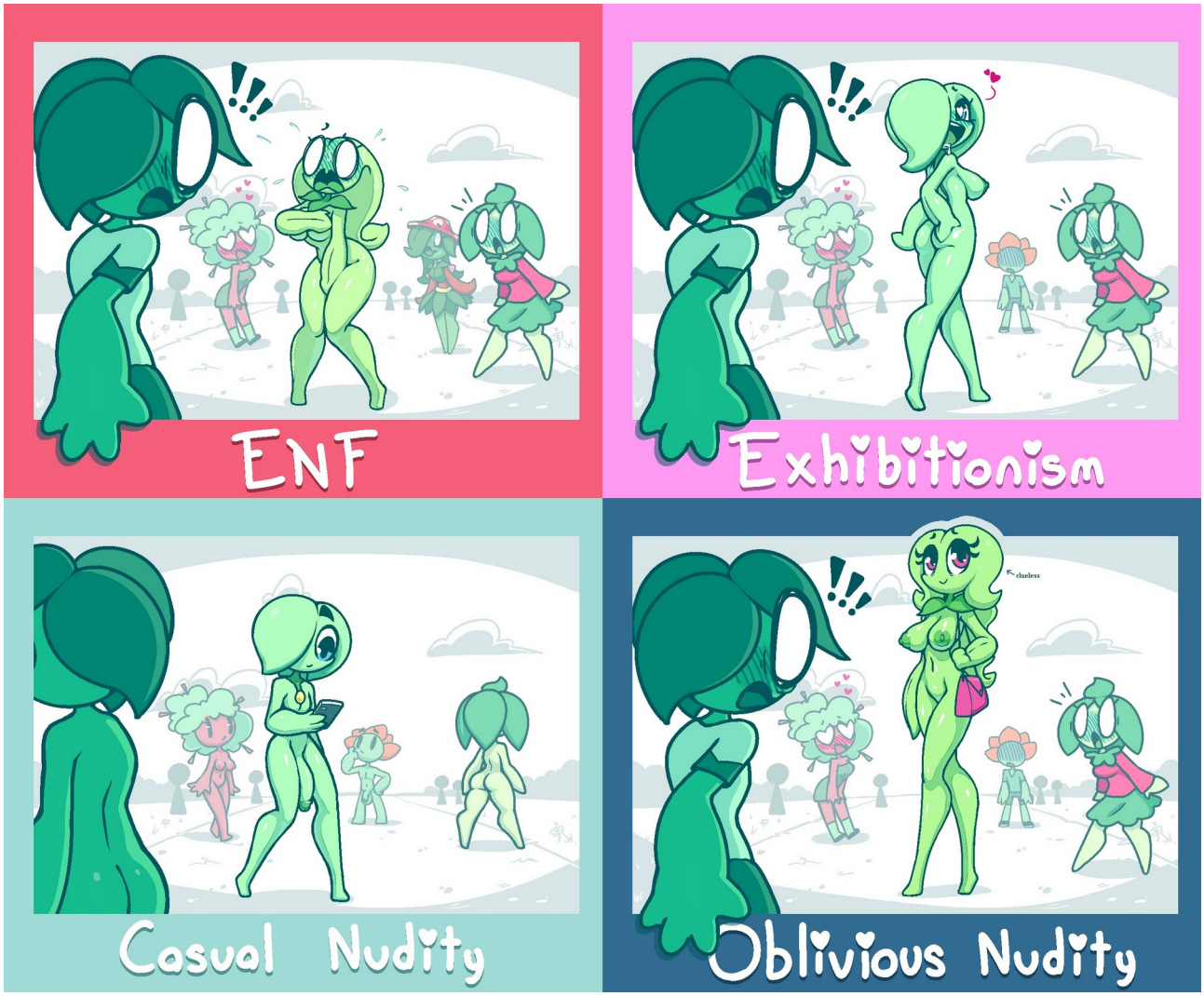
Shame only exists when it seems to someone, when someone himself is convinced – whether he is mistaken or not – that he is doing something wrong to someone else – then he covers up this evil that seems to him to be wrong – so that others do not see it – because he himself has started to decide what is good and what is bad, without being guided by Causality in this regard.

You are ashamed of your action when #1 you think that you are the cause of it and #2 when you think that the action you did is wrong, and #3 when you think that there is someone to be ashamed in front of. People often created burdens of guilt for themselves that they were ashamed of. This is because they themselves determine what is good and what is bad, and are not guided by Causality. Shame of guilt is a strong force that repels us from listening to God.

> Finally he [Adam] said: "I heard your voice in the garden, but I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid myself."
>
> Genesis 3:10

Your guilt, which you are ashamed of, for an action, for a sin, is taken away from you when you realize that none of these three factors are true – and you do not feel guilty. When you sin against a personal god by breaking his commandment or order, you feel a pang of guilt, but when you realize that he does not exist, the guilt disappears. When lies die, the blame of those who have sinned against these lies is taken away.

The body created by Causality is nothing to be ashamed of. You are ashamed of the body you are destroying. The body, which is governed by Causality, is governed by natural instincts. The body is destroyed by factors, methods, activities that are not compatible with the forces that make the body grow and be healthy, which are not compatible with the code that creates it.



artist: screwroot

If you think that nudity is something abnormal, immoral, you are not perfect like the naked son of God, Adam. If humans were to be naked, they would be born this way. Man was not created with a body that looked sinful. No body in itself is sexual, only a person's mind can consider it sexual. Many things considered immoral are not when they follow the two greatest commandments:

> "Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?"
> He said to him: " 'You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind.'
> This is the greatest and first commandment.
> The second, like it, is this: 'You must love your neighbor as yourself.'
> On these two commandments the whole Law hangs, and the Prophets."

Matthew 22:34-40

I would not be surprised if in the new world, the Kingdom of God, some form of sexual promiscuity, respecting these two principles, wouldn't be something bad.

Nothing is bad if these two principles are followed: homosexuality – the love of a man with a man, which transcends bodily barriers, just like the love of a man with God[86]; mutual abuse of insults, which even children do in an atmosphere of friendship; even the very desire for sensual carnal lust; or even killing the people of Sodom – it would be better for them to die and do no evil and then be resurrected, repent and never commit it again, than for their evil to spread in the behavior of other people, as was the case with the cities of Admah and Zeboim.

When you get rid of the chains of ideas that bind you, then you are not bound by them and they do not affect you, but you also cannot influence people who have this idea. These two chains of the greatest commandments make existence bound by: #1 Causality, and therefore the life it gives, #2 The possibility of interacting with other people, so that these people do not exclude you, both family ties and the earthly community, and so that you do not find yourself in the depths of being cut off from them. If you want to have the company of friends, you must obey the laws that make this friendship exist. I am me, and I let you be yourself.

Originally, sex (of all species) was created for reproduction, not for pleasure without reproduction.

A person is not ashamed of his body when he knows that he is not its cause. People are not ashamed of their actions when they are aware that they are not their cause. When you are not the cause, you are not ashamed of the effect that was made by that cause. A person is not ashamed of what he does when he is not the cause, then the effect comes about *through* the person and not *from* that person – when the cause that pushes him is from outside him and not from inside him. In order for something to happen through that person, an external cause must act on that person, for that cause to be from outside, the person must be humble towards Causality and accept what it says.

Shamelessness – not necessarily of the body but above all of actions – allows one to be free from constructs that enslave the mind and prevent a person from doing and acting. Small children are shameless, so they do and act.

All natural human activities are not evil because man is part of nature – or at least he was.

Something is natural if it is subject to Causality, then God governs it. Something that is unnatural ~~does not necessarily mean it is bad~~ is bad. Discoveries and inventions were the natural course of events, but often the path to them was unnatural for the man walking on it.

♦ Convinction of the subsequent generations about the impossibility of gaining eternal life.

> Who can produce someone clean from someone unclean? No one can!
> If his days are decided, the number of his months is with you;
> You have set a limit for him that he may not go beyond.

Job 14:4,5

Jesus paid the debt of disbelief in the possibility of eternal life through resurrection and eternal life. The debt has been paid. Anyone who wants to use it and live forever must follow his path.

86 1 John 5:3 For this is what the love of God means, that we observe his commandments (...)

♦ The desire for forgiveness of sins which in turn led to serving (and creating) personal gods and willingness to offer sacrifices to them

> After some time, Cain brought some fruits of the land as an offering to Jehovah.
> But Abel brought some firstlings of his flock, including their fat. (...)

Genesis 4:3,4

> For you do not want a sacrifice – otherwise I would give it;
> You do not find delight in a whole burnt offering.

Psalms 51:16

> The sacrifices pleasing to God are a broken spirit;
> A heart broken and crushed,
> O God, you will not reject.

Psalms 51:17

You cannot offer worthless sacrifices on the altar. Money cannot be an offering. Indulgences sold by clergy are of no value – neither for the living nor for the dead.

When a killer stops killing, the killer dies.
When a thief stops stealing, the thief dies.
When a sinner stops sinning, the sinner dies, therefore *the sacrifice is the life* of a man – a murderer, a thief, a sinner – the sacrifice is not his hand, foot, body, but his heart, spirit, mind – death in the mind of the thing that caused it; the *death of the will* that kills, steals, sins. Death of desire. Death of causes of these acts. To kill not your body, but your mind as the final sacrifice to God for your sins. Body is not evil – the mind is. The cause that kills is not the gun or the hand of the shooter, but his mind, which contains his will. Die (this way) to pay off the debt (of your sin). Without this sacrifice there is no forgiveness of Causality.

No man's body was created sinful – so no flesh can pay for sin. The spirit of man can sin – so the offering for sin is the mind of the sinner. When the evil heart of an evil person crumbles within him, evil ceases to exist.

Who then can be saved?

> Looking at them intently, Jesus said to them:
> "With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible."

Matthew 19:25-26

A man without his own desires was given as ransom to enable others to fulfill their desires.

This is the final ransom for human life, when a person renounces his will and desires and does God's "will" – until it is fulfilled. To save the spirit of man, because it is the mind that sins, not the body.

Jesus knew that man cannot save himself because then he would have to give up his own desires – and this is impossible for man – since the beginning of humanity, people have had desires and reached for the fruits of their own desires.

When a man stops doing this deed, this man of this deeds dies. Death frees the dying person from penance, from judgment (because the sentence of the judgment is death itself) and from hell as the place of torment of his mind.

A person's sins are forgiven when #1 that person's sins die and #2 the good things destroyed by that sinful evil are restored – because only good can judge the evil.

Even if you kill the entire body of a sinful evil man, it will do nothing because when he is resurrected he will still commit evil because the source of his evil is not the body that was killed but his mind – therefore "do not kill".

The greater the sacrifice, the greater the effect, proportional to the sacrifice.

♦ Imperfections and defects of the body...

> Look! I was born guilty of error, and my mother conceived me in sin.

Psalms 51:5

...are passed down from generation to generation. Sometimes I wondered if this is why Catholic priests are in celibate – to prevent the spread of this imperfections and the suffering associated with it. It is also worth mentioning that when a child is born, only the parents' genes are passed on to him, knowledge and ideas (regardless of whether they are true or false) are transferred (whether by parents, society or further environment) later, therefore it is not worth looking for sin in the mind of a newborn[87] no matter how deformed his body may be, because the mind of the newborn is empty. Furthermore, was Adam's lack of a rib or navel an imperfection? Was Adam the son of God because of his body or his mind? Mind – because it listened to Causality. If it is for the mind, then anyone, regardless of his body, can be a child of God.

♦ Freedom.
You can choose what you want to do – that is, realize what you want to do. Calculate your ~~choice~~, preferences and based on them create an outcome according to which you will act (because your preferences already exist and are decided, therefore the outcome is also decided, you just don't know it yet). Because the past timeline is one, the future timeline is also one and determined by the past of which you are also a factor. You are free not to choose (because the past is already decided), but to realize what you will do, what kind of past you will create.

If the causes are already decided and exist, then the effect is also decided and will exist.

What choice do you have? You can only be a worshiper of Roman gods if you were born in the right times. You can only be a Nazi if you live in the appropriate history of humanity. If so, does the man choose the idea or the idea choose the man?

Although you can decide from the available options, these options are not given to you by yourself. Nothing can be given to a person unless it is given to him by Causality. A person cannot do anything by himself, it must be given to him by a cause, by Causality.

People think that knowledge will make them free, when in fact wisdom enslaves; Children are free from this enslavement, which they usually do without thinking about the consequences. They do something to find out what the outcome will be – no one does something out of curiosity when they know how it will end. Their strength to live lies in ignorance. There is no pleasure in knowing what will happen – no one wants to live a life that knows what it will look like or know the future that they will experience.

87 Job 13:23 What are my errors and sins? Reveal to me my transgression and my sin.
John 9:34 In answer they said to him: "You were altogether born in sin, and yet are you teaching us?" And they threw him out!

Freedom is not something good or bad because one can be free to do good or to do evil. Furthermore, evil and good are subjective to the individual – so sometimes it happens that the individual wants to be free from something that he considers bad, that prevents him from achieving something that he considers good – even if what he considers bad is in fact good and beneficial for him.

Can everyone be free? Should everyone be free? Freedom is not for everyone because bad people do evil things when they are free – but sometimes it is impossible to judge whether evil comes from a person or through a person – so sometimes evil necessarily has to be free so that this person, this idea, this teaching will bear the fruit of its action, its effect which will be judged as bad – as a bad person, as a bad idea, as a bad teaching – because before that one is not sure whether the effect is not necessarily bad, one can even think that the effect of the action of this person or teaching will be good and beneficial but until one is sure of this, this person or teaching must be free to act. When finally the effect of the actions comes, the subject of these actions can be judged as bad – then his freedom is taken away and he is thrown by Causality into the abyss of inaction. Today there are many teachings, beliefs and ideas that are free and are listened to by millions of people – until they bear fruit they cannot be judged by these people – judged by these people abandoning these teachings – in this way these ideas will lose their freedom – the freedom to influence people.

People want to have a choice to good and even to evil because then they believe they are free and feel they have control over their own lives, which is what they desire.

Not every person wants to be free. Enslavement or subordination to someone or something along with the loss of some freedom can bring benefits and effects that the person expects to receive.

Due to the great evil and suffering caused by the actions of many free people, it has become necessary to enslave them – whether through various systems, governments, ideas or religions – if they do not exist, will man be able to do good on his own? No authorities, governments or religions, no secular codes or holy books will help, and no legal penalties will force people to behave well if they themselves do not want to do good – without coercion.

A prisoner is someone who is not free – so a prisoner does not necessarily have to perform forced labor for an enslaver – slave does. Imprisonment is the state of a person in which he has no freedom – but only when he wants this freedom, he wants this freedom only when he has desires that he strives for and which are blocked and made impossible by the imprisonment factor; therefore, freedom implies that there is a purpose for this freedom. Imprisonment is when you do not have the freedom to fulfill your desires, to do what you want.

You are free only when you have the opportunity to fulfill your desires. A plant in a pot is not imprisonment because it has no desire to get out of it because it has no consciousness. Consciousness is necessary to achieve freedom because only through awareness can one be aware of one's desires. A body chained in a dungeon is not free because it cannot fulfill its desires and aspirations – the same is true with a chained mind. Many people, even though they go wherever they want under the open sky, are not free.

A person is free when he has the opportunity to fulfill his desires – but these desires can also enslave him.

Why do you want to be free? Without this "why" you will not be free. Many people lose their "why" or it is simply taken away from them, it's stifled. Then the "why" does not push a person to freedom. In order not to lose this power, this "why", you have to stick to what this power comes from. The “why” is a desire.

Freedom without desire is impossible. Goal, purpose, desire for something is the reason that makes a person seek freedom from everything and everyone who prevents him from fulfilling that desire. When you desire nothing, you do not care about freedom.

He who does not manifest the childlike freedom of a child who fully express himself, does not live fully. In time, this childlike freedom in a child is stifled.

There is the freedom of the material body and the freedom of the immaterial mind. When someone takes away the freedom of another person's body, that person cannot do with his body what he wants. When someone takes away the freedom of another person's mind, that person cannot do with his mind what he desires, cannot express in words or actions what the mind wants. There is no such thing as an enslaved mind that does not realize that it is enslaved.

Can a slave be enslaved when he himself does not know that he is enslaved? No, because a slave always knows that there is some enslaving force preventing him from achieving his desire. There is no such thing as a man who has been deprived of his freedom and who at the same time does not know it. He, who is bound in chains, sees those chains. Is a man free or not when he is bound in chains and when he himself has no desire and sees no cause to break free from them?

If a man is born in prison, will he know that he is enslaved? Yes – because after some time, in this man, a desire will appear which he will not be able to fulfill in the place where he is. A natural desire which can be fulfilled only in conditions which are not artificial such as this enslaving area. The creator's code can execute only in conditions prepared for it by the creator – other conditions or areas where this code is located do not allow the execution of this code – then the awareness of enslavement will appear.

To be free, you have to not let yourself be enslaved, you have to resist the enslaving factors that try to take away a person's freedom – both people and institutions, and the organs of the system. Only someone who opposes and remains unmoved, and does not let themselves be influenced, and refuses to follow orders can prove that they are free from the enslavement that they bring with them. A sense of your own "I" – no matter how imaginary a construct it is – can only be proven when you are not influenced by external causes, the desires of other people, because then you would be controlled by Them and their desires, not by You and your aspirations. A sense of choice – no matter how much it is an illusion – exists only when you are not forced to follow one specific path.

> No enemy will exact tribute from him (...)
>
> Psalm 89:22

Just as you cannot be free from Causality, you cannot be free from violating the freedom of other people because they are the creation of Causality. If you want to be free, you must act free. Don't let your freedom turn others into slaves, but then you won't be completely free.

> That is why if food makes my brother stumble, I will never again eat meat at all, so that I will not make my brother stumble.
>
> 1 Corinthians 8:13, see also Matthew 5:28, 29

You have the greatest freedom when you do what you want, when you do what you desire.

If you want "freedom to something", what you really want is freedom from something that is preventing you from achieving that something.

If I *can* do something, and I believe that I can do it, then the right to do it (or not to do it) has been given to me by the Most High – without the belief that I can do it, there is no possibility of doing it.

Freedom of the immaterial mind is more important than freedom of the material body because the mind controls the body. Free your mind.

People want to be completely free. You can't be free from God because you can't be free from the consequences of your actions (whether good or bad) that Causality makes in the real world where living persons exist (and persons live precisely because they are subject to Causality), therefore truly free are only the dead.

> and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free.
>
> John 8:32

If a man is truly free, then that man knows the real truth. If a man is not free, he does not know the truth – lies enslave. A lie does not occur naturally in the real world but can only be told by another person, and that person is the master of the one who is in his lie. When you are misled, the liar takes your mind and it no longer belongs to you. Satan is the "father of lies[88]" and those who are in his lie are enslaved by him. An enslaved slave is forced to obey his master's word. In most cases, the person being lied to cannot free himself from the lie – someone else can do it. Therefore, one who acts under the influence of a lie is innocent of his act.

Adam and Eve were the freest of people until they were misled by a compelling lie that was the cause that created desire in them, therefore the desire that is within you can enslave you if it is not given to you by Causality.

Causality frees man from the slavery of lies – then man can only be enslaved by consent.

A person sins only when he thinks that what he did was a sin. Then he is a slave to sin because his conscience is enslaved to the construct against which he has sinned. Man is freed when the construct against which he has sinned collapses, ceases to exist, loses its meaning, is proven to be evil and harmful. When money loses its power, debt collapses. When a personal god is proven to be non-existent, sins and blasphemies against him cease to exist. This is how Jesus worked, he freed people from the burden of sin by proving that the constructs they sinned against did not exist. In this way, among other things, the Mosaic Law lost its power and those who sinned against it were set free.

Just as there are masters and slaves, there are ruling nations (liberated from the limiting lie) and slave nations (stuck in false teachings and ideas that are a barrier of progress). Nations and kingdoms whose beliefs, ideas, teachings are closer to the truth are stronger because truth (which is the word of Causality) provides the power, being closer to reality – to change that reality as a result.

Many people wonder why this country cannot be like that other, better nation? Why can't it have a better system like those others? Because the population clings to a compelling lie to which they have become accustomed and which they do not want to let go of. A false idea, science, false faith, views that hinder progress towards the truth. Others knew the truth and the truth set them free.

In a world that belongs to someone else, you cannot be free from its laws. By breaking these laws, you are lost from his world. In a world ruled by the system, you cannot be free from its laws – if you break these laws, you disappear from the world of the system. In a world where Causality rules, you cannot be free from its laws – by acting against these laws, you perish from the area where the laws of Causality rule.

---

88 John 8:44 (...) When he speaks the lie, he speaks according to his own disposition, because he is a liar and the father of the lie.

... therefore, along with the feeling of loneliness, the sense of freedom increases. The right to solitude is one of the basic rights given by God – just as he gave the power to create companionship. “Man is strongest when he is alone” – when you are alone with Causality you draw strength from its low-level words – compared to high-level company and their constructs – that is why, among other things, for many introverts, being with other people weakens them; when they are alone, they draw strength from the impersonal Causality that governs everything that is true and they draw strength from the truth that is the word of God; when they are with other people, often full of untrue, high-level constructs, they spend their strength.

Solitude makes a person own himself for his own – then he does not have to share himself with others.

The company of another person should be optional, not necessary.

The most important battles are fought alone.

The greatest battle was fought by Jesus – that is why all the other, remaining battles that remain to be fought by others, are much lighter.

Those who unite to win are weaker than the one who wins and stands alone. Some people take strength from accumulating morals when they are in a group, but when the group disperses then the same person does not have the strength to achieve the goal, the strength he had when he was in the group. The holy spirit allows you to have strength and power even when you are alone.

When man's desire is the favor of a personal god – then acting against his laws and commandments causes man to feel pangs of conscience and guilt, a burden that he carries on his shoulders and under which his knees buckle. In this way he carries a real burden through someone who does not exist. In this way an army of docile slaves is created, with their faces bowed under the weight, ready to work to redeem their 'sins'.

They are ashamed of what they should not be ashamed of because they were told that the act they committed (although good) is evil – and the committed evil you are ashamed.

I don't have to do anything for society, not all people are social beings. I don't have to do anything, the one who forces is the bad guy. I was born for free and not of my own will. There was no social contract. There was no agreement that I should repay someone for giving me life. For this reason, I owe nothing to my family or society, to anyone on Earth or to anyone in Heaven.

Being thrown out of a society isn't necessarily a bad thing if that society is bad.

Consciousness can bind with chains;
with the unconscious there are no such chains;
when you are aware of something, you can control it with these chains.

True freedom to act is when you do not see the future that restricts this action. Example: #1 You want to do something and you do it, and it is done, but after some time someone or something destroys your work – but it did not stop you from doing your work because you did not foresee the misfortune, you were free because you did not see; #2 You want to do something but you don't do it because you foresee the coming misfortune that would destroy your work and doing it is pointless, you are not free because you see[89]. This also applies to any prophecies that will happen in the future.

89 John 9:41 (...) "If you were blind, you would have no sin. But now you say,'We see.' Your sin remains."

If, using Causality, you see that your intention will fail, you predict a future in which your aspirations will not come true for some reason. Causality says that you will fail – in this way, the word of God shackles a person from acting and throws him into the Abyss where he cannot act.

Building your wealth in a place where your property is exposed to constant danger makes no sense.

When you abandon your pride, honor and dignity to build your glory, then you will not defend them at all costs in all possible ways, both appropriate and inappropriate. Getting rid of them significantly expands the freedom of action and causes the shackles that bind freedom to be thrown off. Jesus did not seek glory from men, he got it from Causality.

If you cannot escape from someone with your body, you can escape from him with your mind, make him impregnable; refusing any answers during interrogation, minds separated from others in a psychiatric hospital, those who take drugs that dull the mind and reasoning ability allowing them to escape from the world around them, using an insurmountable language barrier, or the mind of the victim who is very far away even though her body is in the same room with her torturer, and finally the mind of Jesus separated from others.

Unaware people (e.g. with autism) have a stronger mental barrier protecting them from the desires of others who try to force them to do something, a barrier that allows them to stand their ground, compared to people who think rationally (in high-level language) whose knees buckle under the pressure of others. It's amazing. Even in the face of complete embarrassment and humiliation, great pressure that they could not bear, most people stand their ground because they are not aware (or do not want to be aware) of this embarrassment and humiliation and the bullets of pressure do not reach them at all. Even in the face of consequences... In such cases, it turns out that unconsciousness and ignorance is the main strength of this person as a source of power to act – because awareness of something binds with chains because then the human mind would have to take this something into account in its actions. The unaware do not take this into account in their actions and boldly move forward regardless of it.

It often happens that a person runs away with his mind not only from people but from situations or environments in which he does not want to be. When such a situation happens often and for a long time, a person often runs away from it with his mind and becomes like a walking zombie – his mind is not here, his body is.

A separated mind is a mind that is separated from external factors that cause stress, from ideas and teachings that are incompatible with this mind and that create evil conditions that lead to death. It is often the case that the autistic mind is separate from the constructs that people of this system manifest.

In escaping from enslavement, a person is able to eliminate himself from the area in which this enslavement occurs, whatever it is. When existence is worse than death, in the face of an enslaving life, some choose a liberating death, when life without chains is impossible.

♦ The system of things.
Over the centuries, various political and religious governments and authorities, moral systems, value systems, codes, ideas and even languages have emerged and fallen. All of them were created to rule and guide man. Their cause is the fact that since ancient times man has not been able to govern himself and exercise power over himself well. This is because he is guided in his rule by the lofty lies and untrue ideas that he looks upon. He cannot exercise power over himself because he is not guided by Causality.

It's not about one person standing out from the system and behaving differently, or the person not meeting the expectations of the system – because the system was created for the sake of man, and not man for the sake of the system, and not man who has to arise, build his personality, shape his character, one's beliefs, ideas, create/change one's way of being for the sake of the system – but it is the system that shapes a person from an early age. And this man is in this system, he breathes it like air, he chokes, he feels like vomiting because the air is not clean. He don't want to live there forever. Since no two people are the same, it is impossible to create separate systems for each of them.

The systems of people who don't live forever, don't last forever.

Since a personal god was worshiped from the first children of Adam and Eve, every sin, blasphemy, or transgression against him from then until now will be erased, because he did those things for the sake of that god. These people's consciences will be clean of sin against someone who does not exist. From the beginning of the exile from Eden until now, people have been in a lie, so the actions of all humanity guided by this lie will be forgiven.

Sin can be forgiven when it is committed out of a lie and ignorance.

> But Jesus was saying: „Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing". (...)
>
> Luke 23:34

The more wrong you are, the more actions you can be forgiven. When you are wrong, you cannot be 100% responsible for the actions committed under the influence of that lie.

One who is guided by Causality is never wrong – that is why when you persist in a lie, you persist in the will of someone else because a lie does not occur naturally in the real world and can only be told to you by someone else.

A sin that Causality will not forgive you for is an unforgivable sin that you will pay for sooner or later, one way or another. This is a conscious act, no one is forcing you to do it, it is an action taken on the basis of real data, not lies.

> (...) Every sort of sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the spirit will not be forgiven.
>
> Matthew 12:31

When the *word* means nothing, blasphemy is an *act*, as was the case with the first humans.

He, who is sinned against, has the power to forgive the sins of the sinner who has sinned against him. He, who owns other people, has the power to forgive the sins of the sinner who has sinned against those people.

Adam and Eve took fruit from the tree of wisdom and yet they died. They became wiser because they succumbed to the temptation of wisdom. If they did not have this knowledge (or this knowledge was given by God at the right time), they would live forever. This wisdom did not give them eternal life – on the contrary, it killed them. It's no secret that the happiest people don't think too much and don't worry (just as early humans didn't worry about the wisdom tree) and live in blissful ignorance. It's ok not to know some things. People highly value wisdom, they say it is the most precious treasure, it is not uncommon to talk negatively about unintelligent people and call them fools, and yet ignorance is a true blessing when a person is unable to bear the burden of knowledge[90] because the strength to lift it must come from God. A person may regret knowing something. Often, lying to oneself directly provides relief when one is unable to bear the burden of truth. Sometimes, when a person perceives serious things as a joke, it is an unconscious defense

90 John 16:12 I still have many things to say to you, but you are not able to bear them now.
John 3:12 If I have told you earthly things and you still do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things?

mechanism that prevents him from taking on burdens he cannot bear. Protective unconsciousness and ignorance are from Causality, so do not force wisdom to make them believe, because they will not be able to bear it and will not believe. It's no wonder that some people don't want to know what will happen – they are happily carefree. Some people simply choose ignorance – even when knowledge is forced upon them – they are tired of being responsible for what they know. He who has no knowledge cannot sin. It happens that a person realizes that he was lied to when he was told that wisdom would make him a better person – then he sees how bad he feels with the knowledge and wisdom he has acquired, and he wants to return to the state of previous ignorance – then he does not think too much and does not worry about anything. People are not ready for many of the truths they seek because this wisdom must have a cause, an appropriate cause that, apart from wisdom, will not bring anything bad. Not knowing certain things is good and protective. The more knowledge and wisdom, the less peace of mind, the less you worry the better your spiritual condition in your mind. The first humans chose to worry about what they shouldn't worry about. They could not lift the burden of knowledge from this tree. They were misled into thinking that god was a wise person – and they wanted to be as wise as him.

„You'll be as wise as God[91]", while you don't have to be wise to be happy.

> For an abundance of wisdom brings the abudance of frustration,
> So that whoever increases knowledge increases pain.
>
> Ecclesiastes 1:18

It's not that wisdom makes you suffer – that it's a bad thing. The point is that when you gain wisdom *and when you can bear it*, it ennobles you. You don't give burdens to people who can't bear them. Wisdom without a reason for having it is useless, sometimes even harmful, intelligence gained without a reason leads to pain, suffering and anguish. Suffering is a destructive force. So if you can't stand it, it will not only ennoble you, but destroy you. Physical weights cause muscles to develop and physical strength to increase. Mental burdens increase the strength of the spirit. A burden that is beyond your strength will crush you if it is placed on your shoulders.

Causality said not to take this knowledge because the effect of having it on man would be bad; "I don't know and I don't want to know."

The wise one maintains his humility before it and does not puff himself up with his wisdom when he is aware that he too is subject to Causality – the giver of wisdom – and that both the enlightened wise one and the one in the darkness of ignorance are judged according to their actions by Causality when the consequences of their own actions fall on them.

Humility is submission to the will of something/someone else, humbling yourself before the will of someone else.

Causality is the source of mental strength and its health.

Sometimes people are pushed down into guilt with unreal constructs and lies, even though they had not committed any offense and are not the cause of it. When they are pushed into the pit of guilt they become a prisoner of this imaginary sin or unreal construct.

91 Genesis 3:5 (...) na pewno staniecie się podobni do Boga (...)

We can draw a lesson from the example of Adam and Eve: Wisdom certainly does not lead to eternal life. Listening to God leads to eternal life – both with a wise mind and with an emotional heart:

> (...) 'You must love Jehovah your God with your whole heart and with your whole soul and with your whole mind'

Matthew 22:37

No amount of wisdom will make you live forever, knowledge will not make you live forever – listening and obeying God will make you live forever.

> He sees that even wise people die;
> The stupid and the unreasoning perish together (...)

Psalms 49:10

> (...) Does Jehovah take as much pleasure in burnt offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of Jehovah? Look! To obey is better than a sacrifice, and to pay attention than the fat of rams;

1 Samuel 15:22

> (...) in order to make you know that man does not live by bread alone but man lives by every expression from Jehovah's mouth.

Deuteronomy 8:3, see also Matthew 4:4

If "man lives every expression from mouth of Jehovah" and if "his word is truth," then you cannot live by listening to and accepting falsehoods. Nothing material can fix what is immaterial in a man.

Moreover, no animal or other organic being has taken (or had the opportunity to take) the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, therefore only man on earth has an idea about these values, therefore nature cannot be said to be evil. Similarly about children, most people describe them as "innocent", while what causes this is simply ignorance. Ignorance is nothing bad – acting contrary to what you know may result in something bad – acting against the truth, which is the word of God.

Adults sometimes call little children "pure" or "innocent" – but it is simply ignorance that makes this child not know what he is doing leaving all the action to God – Causality that guides and controls him – so the actions of this child are the actions of God. This makes this child "pure", "innocent" and "sweet". In this way it is possible for a 60-year-old man to be "pure" and "innocent" – if he would survive in the impure and guilty world of the system.

Soul

Man consists of two parts:

- The body – what is material: human cells, organs.
- Spirit – what is immaterial: psyche (Gr. psyché), thoughts, memories, faith.

The beginning of the human body begins with a fertilized egg cell because then the complete DNA code of a new human begins to exist. The body grows according to the code that develops it. The building blocks of the body come from the earth because food comes from the earth. After the body dies (and partially during its life), its material is recycled back to circulation. In the act of creation of the first people, they become souls (Hebrew: nefesh, Latin: anima, Greek: psyché); they neither receive nor possess nephesh.

The beginning of a person's spirit begins with his birth because that is when consciousness (the first non-material thing) arises, such as the awareness of independent breathing or pain. The spirit in man grows by learning, asking and acting according to faith in the answers received. The spirit in a person dies when he does not believe that he can live forever, when he does not want to live, when external factors are stronger than him, when the ideas by which he acted and lived are destroyed, when the body that carries the mind is killed. Since "man was formed in the image of God" and God is not something material, this image of God cannot manifest itself in the material body of man – if you cut off a man's arm, leg or rib, his spirit will remain the same.

> Unreasonable ones! The one who made the outside made also the inside, did he not?

Luke 11:40 see also Matthew 5:3

Material places, such as the planet Earth, are inhabited by material beings. Immaterial places, such as Heaven or Hell, are places where immaterial beings, the minds of people or angels, can be. Hell is the place where your mind suffers. Heaven is the place where those in power reside.

The spirit (mind) in man:

- thinks, analyzes;
- has memories, memory;
- creates emotions when there is their cause: anger, sadness, jealousy, love, envy, happiness, fear, despondency, depression;
- can receive impulses and information from the body: pain, excitement, hunger – in this way the human spirit is connected with the body, for example: when it receives impulses from a muscle, it controls this muscle to the extent that various types of impulses of information are able to come from it to receive;
- can receive impulses and information from the environment – in this way the human spirit is connected with the environment and everything in it.

The spirit of man cannot be seen because thoughts cannot be seen. The spirit in man is immaterial, but its carrier is matter (brain), so when the body dies, its spirit dies with it.

> Then the dust returns to earth, just as it was, and the spirit returns to the true God who gave it.

Ecclesiastes 12:7

Sometimes, after the death of the body, what is immaterial remains – this was the case with people of great ideas whose teachings remain to this day and which still influence, *being part of Causality*:

> (...) What I teach is not mine, but belongs to him who sent me.
John 7:16

> "Go back home, and keep on relating what God did for you." (...)
Luke 8:39, see also Mark 5:19

> And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather, fear him who can destroy both soul and body in Gehenna.
Matthew 10:28

Jesus, Muhammad, Buddha, Luther King, Galileo and Copernicus, Einstein... their ideas, discoveries and teachings are still alive today.

Living man is part of Causality. People fulfilled prophecies because there was a reason for them, and one was explicitly titled "The Word of God[92]". You are part of Causality if you respond to the cause, if you are the effect. A dead person is not part of Causality because he does not respond to the cause – some people are dead while still alive.

> I and the Father are one.
John 10:30

The immaterial – knowing good and bad from the tree of wisdom – caused people to die. If the immaterial controls the body, can the immaterial prevent the body from dying?

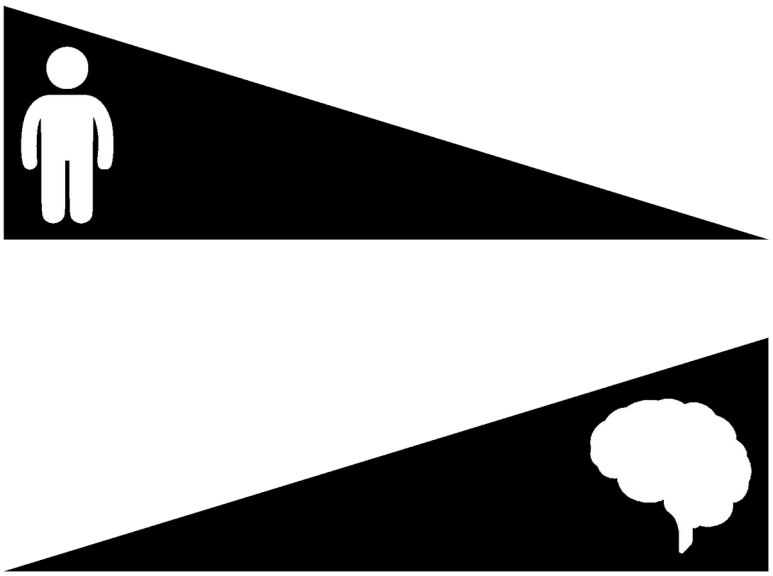
> It is the spirit that is lifegiving; the flesh is of no use at all.
> The sayings that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life.
John 6:63

> (...) flesh and blood cannot inherit God's Kingdom (...)
Corinthians 15:50

Teachings, ideas, commandments, truths, information, data, words of God that do not give life to the spirit, the mind – the mind, the spirit of man that does not give life to the body – are not worth listening to in order to have eternal life – they will die together with the body that fiercely bears them.

92 Revelation 19:13 (...) he is called by the name The Word of God.

When a person is born, he has the least spirit – he is governed by the body he has (that is why this developing body code develops properly when it is not disturbed by the mind that can destroy its proper development and functioning), when a person is old, he has the most spirit that governs the body (and it is this rule of man's spirit over his body that in the vast majority of cases destroys the body).



Inappropriate rule of the spirit over the body often ends in the destruction of the body and, as a result, in its death.

At the beginning, a person is controlled by his body (the code of the body that is executed) because it consists mostly of the body, then a person is controlled by his spirit (the code that is executed in his mind) because it consists mostly of the spirit – you consist of what you have, what you have controls you, to the extent that you have it. When a human has more of the material body than the immaterial mind, then he uses the body more than the mind. When a person has more of the mind than the body, then he uses the mind more than the body. You use what you have – when you use it, then it is active, when it is active, then it is part of life, therefore there are material and immaterial living beings.

That's why you can often notice that children have a stronger psyche – or rather – any missiles attacking a child's mind don't have much to hit.

The cause gives the power which makes the effect. By allocating more power to the mind, less is allocated to the body; by allocating more power to the body, less is allocated to the mind. He who thinks little, more of the remaining power is allocated to the body, whether in the form of health, strength of body, or beauty of body. Excessive thinking destroys the body. Little children who live in ignorance have a body full of power. He, who wants to possess the knowledge of the future of Causality which governs everything, cannot remain in the body.

The body develops at its own pace, the mind grows at its own pace – for each individual, according to the code they have. There are different stages of maturation of the material body and there are different stages of maturation of the immaterial mind.

The more body you have, the more time it takes you to take care of it.
The more mind you have, the more time you need to take care of it.
If I don't have favorable conditions for rest, it takes longer to rest.

Man does not live by food alone. What enters the human body builds the human body. What enters a person's mind builds a person's mind. What gets into a person creates, builds and changes a person in accordance with the code (code of the body or code of the mind) that develops him. One person will accept what is given to him, the other will reject it because it is not compatible with the code he already has inside.

The more immaterial there is in a person, the more immaterial he becomes. The more immaterial a person becomes, the less pleasure he feels from what is corporeal and material. In this way, man is expelled away by Causality from the place where he can experience material, bodily pleasures – from Paradise for the body. Only the death of these immaterial things in a person's head will make him return to being only a body capable of receiving joys of the body. The more immaterial a person becomes, then only immaterial pleasures can quench his mental desires.

The carnal man has a carnal desire. There are obstacles that stand in his way to fulfilling these desires. Man learns and study how to overcome them. This new knowledge and consciousness cause the immaterial to appear in the material man, his mind expands. When one, who is material, changes into one, who is immaterial, to fulfill his carnal desires, can he still fulfill them? Will he still want to fulfill them?

When you cut off a leg, an arm, or gouge out an eye, the human body has fewer and fewer parts. You subtract more and more parts from the human body, when you subtract all of them, the body dies. Similarly, a person's mind dies when there are fewer and fewer existing parts (true data, real information) – or more and more non-existent parts (made up stories, imaginary constructs) – when the mind is filled with lies then it cannot live in the real world.

The corporeal being rests when it does not use the body, the spiritual being rests when it does not use the mind. The food of the corporeal organism is material food, the spiritual being feeds differently[93], the source of its strength is different.

The body is created through the suffering of the body. The mind arises through the suffering of the mind. When you are a body and you want to be something more, you have to suffer. When you work physically, building your mind is difficult because you are building your body. This is one of the reasons why Moses, Elijah, and Jesus fasted for a long time in the middle of nowhere[94] – they did not worry about their bodies because they were not only flesh. Jesus withstood all the physical blows because he was not just flesh – the power to act did not come from what was in the stomach, but from what was in the mind.

The one who is only flesh cannot fully understand one who is not only a body.

In the human there is nothing sacred or extraordinary, for the one who know him all.

There are different kinds of corporeal beings because their bodies have different structures, natures and functions. There are different types of spiritual, mind and immaterial entities because they are constructed differently, have different data, different levels of complexity – high-level and low-level entities.

93 John 4:32, 34 (...) My food is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work.
94 Matthew 17:21 (KJV) Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

An angel does not have a body, he is a spirit. A plant has no mind, it is material. If more bodily impulses reach you, you are a body with a mind. If you can control your body, if you receive more spiritual impulses, you are a mind with a body. Sometimes it happens that some persons refer to themselves using pronouns 'it' instead of 'he/she' to indicate that they are a mind that has a body instead of a body that has a mind, a mind that controls the body instead of a body that controls the mind. That is why, among other things, must be especially remembered that God is an "it" and not a "he" – because this led to the formation of a false and distorted image of God as a person with a human appearance, which led to a complete and false perversion of the nature of God.

How can something immaterial affect matter? Just like the immaterial human mind can affect something material. Immaterial code affects matter. Human minds are full of code – teachings, ideas, beliefs.

Resurrection and revival. To resurrect means to cause previously stopped code to execute again. Resurrection is the restoration of previously stopped code to continue running. The code of mind in particular (beliefs, ideas, memories[95], desires, aspirations...) because once the code of the body (DNA) is restored, it can be killed again by the code of the mind. The code of the mind kills the code of the body when the mind has a bad code that causes the death of the body: #1 lies and untruths that make it impossible to create a real body from these unreal values and it cannot function properly; #2 desires whose *fulfillment* means harm to the body and desires whose *very path* to them means harm to the body, whose very means to realize them causes harm, which are not fulfilled on the path of causality, step by step. Without removing these two points, eternal life is impossible, after removing these two things, resurrection will be possible.

> But if Christ is in union with you, the body is dead because of sin, but the spirit is life because of righteousness.
> If, now, the spirit of him who raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the one who raised up Christ Jesus from the dead will also make your mortal bodies alive through his spirit that resides in you.

Romans 8:10-11

What is this spirit that resurrected Jesus?

> (...) My spirit will not tolerate man indefinitely (...)

Genesis 6:3

- it is the spirit of Causality that people have stopped following, stopped listening to his word which is the truth, stopped listening to the truth because they are surrounded by lies, and getting out of the lie that builds you is painful and means the death of a part of you – will you be angry with him who takes this part from you? The truth can be deadly, if there is a lie in you then the truth kills a part of you. Thus, for man, his will has become more important than the word of God and man perishes because he is guided by a false lie in the real world.

Weak, contaminated, underdeveloped individuals die in nature, and people's minds, soaked in lies, die in the real world, as something that does not exist in the existing world. Dead falsehood dies in the world of truth. The false ideas and teachings of this system are about to die – don't let them take you with them.

Even if the body of a man in which there is truth dies, the cause that created him will resurrect him again, but can the true cause resurrect the body of a man in which there is untruth? The Word of Causality is truth because its creating word is truth, and Causality is the source of life, so how can it create falsehood again by resurrecting the falsehood that has died?

95 Matthew 12:41 Men of Nineveh will rise up in the judgment with this generation and will condemn it, because they repented at what Jonah preached. But look! something more than Jonah is here.

Every person from birth follows Causality – a person sins when he is not following Causality. Then the spirit of God, which is the source of life, has no effect on man and man dies.

The code that exists and is not executing, sleeps – until something from the outside "wakes" it up and makes it start executing again. Does not need to be resurrected to function the one who executes code all the time, without interruption – because the execution of his code does not stop.

A person dies because he cannot fulfill his desires. A person is resurrected only when he sees that he has the opportunity to fulfill his desires (that will push him to action, to life).

As invisible air moves the leaves of trees, so invisible ideas move people.

Moreover, man's material body cannot ascend to the immaterial Heaven. What is immaterial in man, and therefore also his ideas, can go to the immaterial Heaven. And from this high Heaven, these ideas can be seen by everyone because these ideas and values are placed high up so that everyone can see them and be guided by them – just as the literal light from heaven illuminates the way so that a person knows where to go.

The DNA code builds the material body, including the brain – the most complex structure in the universe. From the moment of birth, data begins to accumulate in this material center and a code appears that creates the mind, i.e. the human spirit, which is unique among other earthly living creatures because only this code creates a mind that can ask questions – and Causality answers them. With the answers, the mind expands and – just as the body develops – the human spirit develops.

Since the human spirit is something immaterial, its medium does not have to be matter – in this case, the brain.

Every person from birth is guided by Causality – or rather: it is Causality that guides and rules man. Causality makes you hungry and sends you to look for food, when you are full Causality sends you to defecate, as you mature Causality sends you to look for a partner to satisfy your sex drive (in countries that have banned pornography, many more children are born because carnal man seeks the satisfaction of his desire in another person, not in pornography) – similarly Causality sends people (prophets, Jesus) to do what they were sent to do, it does not happen from their own will. Causality places desires in man: desires of body, for food, for sex, and of mind, and causes him to look for means to satisfy these desires.

The soul affects the body, the body affects the soul. When the body has a need, it sends signals to the mind to look for a place to defecate. When the body craves alcohol, a person can go into debt to get it. When the mind has a desire, it sends signals to the body to get the figure sculpted for the Olympics.

What controls what? The body can control the mind, the immaterial mind can control the material body. It is the immaterial code that causes the material earth to bend to its will and create a body. It is the immaterial thought that causes the material medium in which the thought is located to physically change. It is the immaterial spirit that can control the material body, although the body can also control the immaterial mind.

Only the immaterial spirit, the mind in man can perceive what is immaterial: pain, love, etc. When a man does not receive these immaterial signals, the man becomes only a material body.

The sight of something, as well as purely abstract things such as imagination or a dream, cause real reflections in the form of body reactions such as laughter, blushing, erection or movement of limbs during sleep.

> But his flesh upon him shall have pain,
> and his soul within him shall mourn.

Job 14:22 (KJV)

What is abstract in a person's mind is real, because it controls the body and influences the environment. These abstract things build languages, cultures, morals, religions, behaviors and meaning. Everything moves and brings life. It is no wonder that children live fully in an imaginary world where their imagination has no limits.

It is unconsciousness (like in small children) that prevents bad mental conditions from reaching us.

The mind controls the surroundings, the environment and the body. How are you going to control them if you can't control your own mind?

Just as pressing the keys on a computer changes its interior, the same happens with humans. Without these abstract and artifactual things there is no life because there is no code that controls the body. These things can be easily created, destroyed or restored if lost.

With the death of the body, mind dies – billions of human lives are proof of this. Jesus' body died and yet he still lived. The spirit turned out to be stronger than the body because it was the spirit that ultimately acted on the body, not the body on the spirit.

It is worth noting that in the Book of Revelation the general resurrection of the dead follows the complete annihilation of Satan – the resurrection of people who can only live in conditions they can withstand.

For resurrection to occur, there must first be death.

For resurrection to occur, you must have someone to resurrect and you must have someplace to resurrect to.

If people do not turn from their evil ways, not only will humanity face destruction, but also the resurrection of the dead will be pointless and will not take place.

Resurrection has always occurred through humans – perhaps because not every person can see that, what is immaterial[96]. Elijah, Jesus, Peter[97] – it never happened that an angel or a demon alone resurrected a man.

To have the company of other people you first have to desire it, at first even Adam had no desire for company, only later – and he lived hundreds of years. Adam got a human companion when he wanted company. Similarly, a man who likes solitude can't get resurrected one if he does not desire it, if he does not care about him. Only a human being who has the desire for companionship can gain the companionship of another human – whether by creating him, conceiving him, or resurrecting him.

96 Matthew 8:5-13
97 1 Kings 17:22; John 11:43; Acts 10:40

When? If a person can be resurrected by someone else (by something else) at any time, why rush when he can be resurrected in a minute or in a million years? What is the problem, what is the reason that a person cannot be resurrected at this moment? Is it because this man does not have conditions (outside or inside him), conditions that have overcome him, conditions that he cannot endure and in which he does not want to live forever?

Why rush to save the world and humanity when a person can be resurrected at any time? Jesus was in no hurry to come since the first people began to die.

Man cannot be resurrected at any time. This must be the time when conditions will prevail that will not cause death – this is how the world and humanity are saved: by destroying the conditions that cause death, conditions both outside and inside man.

There will be no resurrection until the cause that kills is removed. Why keep creating the same code when there is still a cause that interrupts it?

For a man who was defeated and killed by an evil science, idea to be resurrected, this evil, untrue science, idea cannot exist and be resurrected with him. Therefore, it must be proven that it is evil. And to do this requires a human sacrifice. There is no other way to prove that the idea that drives man is evil and deadly.

For a dead person to live again, killing teachings and ideas cannot be brought back to life with him.

When does resurrection occur? When there is a cause for it. This cause must be within the resurrected person (desire) and outside of the person (good conditions conducive to fulfillment of desires) – just as the code must have good conditions for execution.

One desire (new code) of Jesus had sufficiently good conditions (that most people could not bear) to come true just three days after his crucifixion.

The resurrection of many people after Jesus' death was possible thanks to Jesus fulfilling the prophecy and thus – thanks to receiving faith for those who were resurrected – faith that creates good conditions inside a person, in the mind.

> And the tombs were opened, and many bodies of the holy ones who had fallen asleep were raised up (and people coming out from among the tombs after his being raised up entered into the holy city), and they become visible to many people.
>
> Matthew 27:52-53

There are prophecies that speak of a general resurrection of humanity. Everyone is resurrected at the right time for them – a time when they will be able to fulfill their desires and aspirations – they will be able to fulfill them when the conditions are good for this – the conditions will be good for this when they are good outside of man and inside him – therefore these conditions may never come when man does not abandon his evil which causes bad conditions to arise inside him – and this in turn causes him not to be able to fulfill his desires – this in turn causes him not to want to live without the possibility of fulfilling his goals – this will cause him not to be able to resurrect.

What can be resurrected and restored and what cannot?
A bird that dies in water cannot be resurrected under that water. A false idea or false teaching that has entered into a man who perishes following it cannot be brought back into the mind of man. An organism can only be resurrected under conditions that will not kill it again. Code can only be rewritten under conditions where it can execute.

Eternal life, and at the same time resurrection to life, is impossible without peace of mind. For resurrection to be possible, people must be freed from what killed their minds in the first place:

- from sin – from the torment of the sinner's consciousness from sin and its consequences;

  > (...) you will die in your sin (...)
  > John 8:21

- from burdens – burdens that others cannot bear;
- from evil desires – desires that cause mental stress or the fulfillment of which means harm or loss to others, causing them evil;
- from a bad path to desires – these desires do not have to be bad, but the path to them is bad, uncertain, stressful, unprofitable, beyond strength, a path that cannot be followed at the same time without committing evil on that path;
- from the impossibility of fulfilling desires – a person cannot live without fulfilling his desires, aspirations and goals;
- from the rule of evil – people raise the eyes of their minds to all these ideas and teachings that have been raised high to rule people, and they see them, they also see the effects of their rule and the future that they have prepared for them, a future in which they do not want to live; a person closes the eyes of his mind to it during his lifetime so as not to see it; people do not want to submit to rulers that do not give everyone the opportunity to fulfill their desires; one cannot be resurrected to a place where evil rules – "Until Heaven is no more, they will not wake up"; then people's eyes will open when they will not see everything that spoils the mind; man closes his eyes to evil – when there is no evil then he opens his eyes;
- from the anger of God – from the anger of Causality, that is, from pouring out the effects of bad deeds on the people who committed them;
- from bad future – man is filled with anxiety when he sees evil and misfortune that are inevitably approaching – and he does not act or fulfill his desires because he knows that his works will be destroyed by this coming evil – just as evil destroys the entire planet.

For a general resurrection to occur, must original sin be forgiven? If so, then the idea that caused this original sinful act must be annihilated once and for all.

If the cause that kills people still exists, there cannot be a general resurrection.

What is the reason by which someone can be resurrected? It is similar to the reason that makes us wake up from sleep or the reason that gives us the mental strength to go to work tomorrow. This cause is always from outside man. The resurrection of a person has always occurred through something or someone from outside. If you get everything from the outside, including life, will you get resurrection or eternal life from the outside?

What is dead can only be resurrected by what is alive.

Only that which is subject to Causality, even if killed, will be resurrected. That, which is in the image of the Immortal, can live forever.

A person gives up, lies down and does not get up if he cannot withstand the attacks of the attacker – especially not only the physical ones. Only true God can give true strength to endure them. The one who lies down and does not get up does not have this strength.

How to resurrect an evil person? If a bad person is not bad in himself, but there is some external cause that makes him do bad things, then first you have to get rid of that cause, science, idea, system or anything else, only then can you resurrect that person and he will not do evil because the cause that pushed him to evil no longer exists. When a man is stronger than the evil orders he is given, then the cause cannot push him to evil effect. When there is no sea, the winds cannot make it storm.

If you defend your views, your faith, if you defend the truth despite what others say, despite oppression, persecution, by ridiculing, beating, hurting, killing. This is the soul. Apart from the body they killed, they didn't kill what you were defending, because it was the truth and the truth cannot be killed, the truth cannot be lied to. After all, the truth defends itself, you just have to stand on its side.

> Sanctify them by means of the truth; your word is truth.
>
> John 17:17

When you stand on the side of truth, no one can kill you because no one can kill the truth. When a person is deceived by a lie, no personal god can get him out of darkness of falsehood.

Adam and Eve knew the truth about the tree of knowledge, they abandoned it and it was no longer in them.

If they made you change your mind by abandoning your beliefs, then essentially your faith would die, so a part of you would die.

When you reject the truth you cannot live in the real world. You can't respond to real world impulses if you're clinging to a lie. A lie, once proven to be a lie, does not come back to life to lie to others again.

When they want to force you to abandon the truth that is within you, the immaterial force by which you act and you yet refuse – then salt does not lose its saltiness, its strength, what makes it what it is, what defines it, what makes it exist – because without this property it does not exist. If you took the saltiness away from salt, salt would cease to exist.

> You are the salt of the earth, but if the salt loses its strength, how will its saltiness be restored? It is no longer usable for anything except to be thrown outside to be trampled on by men.
>
> Matthew 5:13

How was Jesus resurrected? As long as I don't know the mechanism of the resurrection process, I can't truly believe in it. The most unknown is the restoration of memory for the resurrected person from before his death. To definitely know the answer to this question, you have to experience it yourself. To experience this, you must first follow the path of the one who rose from the dead.

To understand how a man rises from the dead, one must first understand how a man came into being. To understand why a man should rise from the dead, one must first understand why a man came into being in the first place – to know the cause of his existence – to know the chain of causes that caused a man to come into being.

The body comes into being through the code (DNA) of the body, the mind comes into being through the code (teachings, ideas, wisdom, beliefs, truths) of the mind. Through this, resurrection and revival occur: it is the invisible code that materializes the material body and the immaterial mind. The right, good, executing code. And the word (of God) became flesh (of man).

If the resurrection is a very low-level event, it is very difficult for a person who uses a high-level language to understand it.

We believe in the most complicated things when we see them or experience them, but the resurrection of the body is not an everyday occurrence – unless it is the resurrection of a man's mind: from his evil ways to good, from his death to life. It is difficult for one who is only a body to believe in what is only visible to the mind.

If God cannot revive a damaged old man who still exists, then he cannot give life to a dead, dry skeleton.

To revive the dead, one must give him a cause for life, a cause that only Causality can give. If life comes only from Causality, then resurrection comes only from Causality.

Since one man rose from the dead, no one has repeated his feat – that is why few people today believe that a person can overcome death – this is very clearly visible in the fact that people are preparing for death. They are getting ready to die because they don't want to live in these conditions. They do not want to live in these conditions because they do not believe in changing them. They do not believe because they have been cut off from the source from which faith comes – from Causality.

If one man can achieve it, all people can achieve it.

How does resurrection occur? Through the life-giving code. It can't be a lie.

A transgression, a sin against a construct, is forgiven if the construct is destroyed – the laws of Moses, the laws of nations, the commandments of sacred books, the procedures of secular codes. When the sin that results in death is removed because the construct against which we have sinned is removed, then there will be restoration to life because the debt of sin has been paid – by someone else – through his destruction of the construct against which we have sinned.

> to give knowledge of salvation to his people by forgiveness of their sins
>
> Luke 1:77

One thing is certain: the body of Jesus itself is not the source of life, the spirit is – *and this one never died* because he did not abandon ideas and teachings based on truth (as Adam and Eve did).

Many people behave as if they were dead while they are alive. It seems that Jesus died and rose again – but death never leads to life. You can't bring something back if it doesn't exist anywhere else in some form (or: if the cause that would make the creation of that 'some form' does not exist anywhere else). There has to be continuity of code – inside you or outside you. There must be continuity of cause and effect. What created man before he came into being was outside him – so after a man dies only that and those outside him can bring him back to life.

Resurrection not of your body but of your mind
- when you hold on to the truth and never let go of it, the mind in which it is will never die. A lie perishes – the mind in which there is a lie perishes along with the lie.

For those who are used to it, who are in a lie, who have no hope, who are dead, there is no other way to revive them except through pain that destroys what is old in them and creates in them what is new (or forgotten). Like a newborn baby is revived by pain so that it can breathe.

To wake up from sleep, you must first have something to wake up – don't get rid of these things.

Apart from one widely known case of one man who managed to do this, billions of people die and do not get up. *There is nothing in them* that will continue to live after the body is killed.

> (...) For dust you are and to dust you will return.
>
> Genesis 3:19

Adam and Eve, abandoning what was immaterial (the law, God's command to avoid the fruit of the tree), became only a material body, dust. Rejecting what is immaterial, man becomes only matter, dust. Only the immaterial spirit is life-giving, "the body is of no use" if it is not controlled by the immaterial spirit of man, the mind.

> And the LORD said: My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.
>
> Genesis 6:3 (KJV)

What makes man not just dust is listening to Causality which puts into the material man what is immaterial. When a person listens to Causality and does what Causality tells him, then the Spirit of God acts on that person.

The one who rejects the mind is ruled only by the body, its instincts and natural drives. You do, you don't think. The body multiplies in unfavorable conditions that threaten its offspring, but the mind no longer sees it.

If a person kills ideas, beliefs and desires in his mind, the mind is dead. A man without a mind is dead. By killing what is in your head, you are killing yourself because a person is not a body. By killing what is in the mind, you kill the mind.

First comes the body, then the mind. This is how a person develops. Therefore, if an attempt was made to resurrect a newly deceased infant, the body itself would be resurrected because there is nothing to restore from its mind, it is empty. It is worse when it comes to resurrecting the spirit of older people, because is it possible to restore the ancient mind of a zealous worshiper of Egyptian deities or the fanatical spirit of a person fully devoted to the idea of Nazism? How to bring a mind full of untruth back to the real world?

There are people who are alive and yet behave like the dead, so it is not about resurrecting and reviving the body, but about reviving the human spirit[98]. People who have not dead body but dead mind[99]. Just as the corporeal code revives and builds the body, so the spiritual code revives, animates and builds the human mind. A living human body without a mind ~~is dead~~ is at the level of the plant and does not enjoy life to its fullest potential – it does not enjoy life to the fullest potential for which it was built, because it does not use the built things that were given to it. One who is dead is not afraid of death.

For a robot to work, something must move him into action, its program, the code it will execute. When you take away the code that the robot is now executing, it will stop working. To restore a robot whose code has been taken away, you need to restore its code. If the old code that made it work has brought it to a dead end, then another, new, immaterial code must be inserted into it to make the material robot work again.

98 Ezekiel 37:1-10

99 John 5:21, 25 (...) the hour is coming, *and it is now*, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God, and those who paid attention will live.

Money makes it impossible for everyone to have comfortable living conditions because where rich people are, must also be those poor. If the poor do not want to live in this system where money rules, then the resurrection of the dead who would also not want to live in it, being poor, makes no sense, therefore the resurrection of all corporeal people is not possible where it is impossible to obtain comfortable means of life for the body. Consequently, the resurrection of everyone to a comfortable life in a world where is a system based on money is impossible.

If a person will be resurrected and will be affected by external factors that cause death, the resurrected person will die again. These factors will affect his body or mind. Therefore, you need to get rid of these factors – or make a person stronger than them.

Even the repentance of the murderers will be pointless because it will not be possible to resurrect the dead if they die again at the hands of other people.

The simpler the being, the easier it can be repaired, restored, resurrected.

If resurrection is not possible, it is not worth following the path of good because this good will not bring back the dead – and it will not give you eternal life.

It is difficult (if not impossible) to resurrect something that has been proven false into the real world.

The laws of the universe after the resurrection of humanity will be the same as they are today – nothing will change – it is the inside of a man that must change. Causality will continue to punish people for their bad actions. Causality does not change.

As long as there are no livable conditions in the world, the living do not deserve their dead.

When money is limited, material goods and commodities are also limited; when these goods are limited, the number of people who use them is also limited – thus resurrection cannot occur because there would be more people on Earth than ever before.

If such a complex creature as a human can be brought back from the dead, then it is also possible to bring back the inanimate, the Earth, however damaged it may be.

If the people of the system imprison and kill people whose minds contain divine goodness, they would do the same to the angels of God who took corporeal forms. Why bring back to life, why resurrect good people who want to change the world for the better if the world will kill them again? As long as the world kills good people, the world is not worthy of their goodness.

Holy spirit

The holy spirit is the power from Causality. It is not material. A man can have the holy spirit.

When you have the "Why", you have the holy spirit. The "Why" is from Causality, you may or may not see it – and when you don't see the "why" you will have no power to act. Without "why", the activities performed are meaningless. The "why" can be either a serious reason that you care about or simple curiosity. When you know why you shouldn't do something, you have the power not to do it (Adam and Eve didn't eat the forbidden fruit because they knew why they shouldn't do it). When you know why you want to do something, you have the power to do it. When you do something, some activity, some job, some profession, for the sake of money, your "why" is money. You will leave what you are doing when you can do another, better paying job. You will stop what you are doing when someone gives you more money not to do it (e.g. a bribe).

The holy spirit is from God because truth is from God. False values and ideas, teachings and religions do not provide the "why" because they teach false science and it cannot provide fruit – from any tree. "But look how much good these sciences and religions cause!", yes, the teachings may contain some truth, just like Satan's in the Garden of Eden: #1 You will become similar in wisdom to those in Heaven (truth[100]), #2 Certainly you will not die (false[101]).

The holy spirit comes *only* from God – from everything that is subject to God and from all those who are led by Causality and are guided by it, not doing their own will but God's will – through them God gives the holy spirit, but they themselves are not the source of the holy spirit. The holy spirit does not come from a man doing God's will, but from God through a man who serves Him – just like a messenger brings a message but this message is not from himself.

The holy spirit can come from God through a man who is subject to God. Then this man is part of God – that is why one often hears, wrongly, that the holy spirit can come directly from a man – because the bond of this man with God is so great that it seems that they are one (because in both there is one will, the same goal and equal desires). A servant slave is the property of his master because he performs the actions of the master who has control over him and the master gives him the strength to perform the will of the master – in this way this slave is part of the master. Similarly, a servant is the property of God because he performs the actions that Causality sent him to perform and God has control over him and gives him the strength to perform his will – in this way this servant who does not fulfill his own will is part of Causality – just as a hand that does not fulfill its own will is part of a man or a machine that is remotely controlled from a distance is part of the one who controls it. God, Causality, cannot exist without this and those who are subject to him – because then he has nothing to rule. A ruler without subjects ceases to exist. He, who controls, does not exist without the one he controls.

Only what is true is subject to God, therefore a person who has untruth, false values, thoughts and ideas in his mind cannot obtain the holy spirit through them. Strenght can only be drawn from truth – the truth, from which many people cover their eyes.

Conversation with Causality gives the "why" – the strength, force that directs and guides and pushes towards a goal, an effect.

> Then Jesus, full of holy spirit, turned away from the Jordan, and he was led aboutby the spirit in the wilderness.
>
> Luke 4:1 See also Luke 4:14 "Now Jesus returned in the power of the spiritinto Galilee. (...)"

100 Genesis 3:5 (...) your eyes will be opened and you will be like God, knowing good and bad;
Genesis 3:22 (...) Here the man has become like one of us in knowing good and bad (...)
101 Genesis 3:4 At this the serpent said to the woman: "You certainly will not die".
Genesis 2:17 (...) you will certainly die

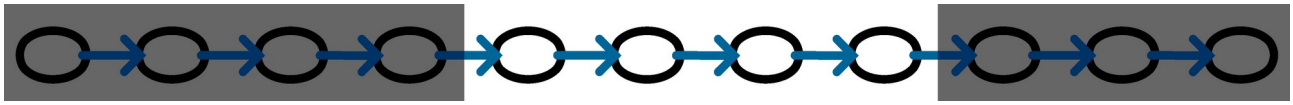
If you are not full of strength, the work will not be done.

A cause is a force that makes an effect. When you have this strength, you will definitely get the effect.

The holy spirit is the Code that is holy. Holy, separate from the ideas, teachings, code of this system.

In order to have the strength to do something, the “why” must influence you. For example: a small child does something because it is interesting to him and he wants to see what the result will be because he does not know it, an adult will not do the same because he knows what the result will be and it is not interesting for him – something that affects the one who does not know does not necessarily affect the one who knows.

Most people does understand why they are doing something. Knows their "why", strength, the reason for their actions. However, they does not realize why there is a cause for this cause, let alone a cause for the cause of the cause. For example: a policeman stops a criminal because he broke the law, but he does not wonder what the reason for the creation of this law was – even if the act referred to this law was legal in other countries. He doesn't worry about the reason for this law – he leaves it to others. His "why" is: "because my superior told me to" or "because it is written (in the law)", but he does not know why. The deeper you know the "why" in the chain of causation, the greater your power.



Most people only know a small part of the chain of causation. Both in terms of themselves and the world around them.

When you know the "why" very deep in the chain of causation and when you act on it and cause an effect, then to outsiders who see it it looks unusual because they don't know the "why" that deep. It's like a miracle for them. Only those for whom it is not unusual can do things that are unusual for others.

Physical strength has a reason: it comes from proper diet and exercise. Strength, psychic power must also have its cause, its "why", you cannot magically take it from nothing – so do not cover your eyes and ears from its source – even if it is suffering. Suffering can provide the strength to act – so don't run away from it. A person's physical power and strength comes from the suffering of the body. When you get tired and suffer at the gym, your body (although deprived of strength in advance) gains the power to bear these physical burdens and is prepared to bear them. When you get tired and suffer mentally, your mind gains the power to bear these intangible burdens because it is prepared to bear them. So it's no wonder that many people who work physically, when they come home after work, have no strength to do anything, not because of physical fatigue, but because of mental fatigue. This mental power regenerates when you do not spend it, when you do nothing physically and mentally, intellectually.

I don't have my own strength to spend it on work (whether physical or mental). I get physical strength from outside. I get mental strength from outside. Food provides physical strength. Truth provides spiritual strength of the mind, therefore falsehood cannot provide mental strength, whatever that falsehood is – an idea, science, religion.

Strength is created when there is a cause that creates this strength, not before. Many people panic and give up at the start when they think about the burdens that are coming and that they cannot lift at that moment, but if they did not give up, they would find the strength needed to lift these burdens, only later[102].

People often do not understand and are surprised when something happens "out of nothing", but the cause of this effect is simply located very deep in the chain of causality, so deep that they do not know it.

If there is no strength to work (cause), no work will be done (effect).

When you need power to act, you turn only to Causality.

Man gets tired when he does not walk the path of Causality because then Causality does not push him without giving him strength. When you walk the path of Causality then you receive strength from Causality to walk this path. When you walk the path of Causality you will have strength to receive the effect, when you walk the path of Causality the cause is your strength – because the cause makes the effect. You walk the path of causality when you accept the truth and are guided by it in making decisions and actions.

Even Jesus didn't have the strength to carry the stake[103].

Faith is necessary to have the holy spirit.

Man cannot do anything without a cause – therefore, what a man wants to do must be given to him – by Causality. If you want to do something – Causality must be with you, it must push you towards that thing, then it will happen.

When you abandon the real "why", you abandon the real power that actually works, that is, the power that gets the work done. When you accept a false "why" you assume a false power that can do nothing, that power is of no use in doing any work. When you seek true power, it must come from a true source.

The power that brings true results can only be derived from truth. Many people lie to themselves, comforting themselves: "It will be fine," when it is not so, and in this way they take away the strength and power needed to be fine.

102 Mark 13:11 And when they are taking you to hand you over, do not be anxious beforehand about what to say; but whatever is given you in that hour, say this, for you are not the ones speaking, but the holy spirit is.

103 Matthew 27:32 As they were going out, they found a man of Cyrene named Simon. This man they compelled into service to carry his torture stake.

Giver of "why"	True or false "why"	Recipient / why the reason was not accepted	The sender's "why" accepted or rejected
God	Do not eat the fruit of the knowledge of good and bad Because you will definitely die	Adam and Eve	✗
Satan	Eat the fruit of the knowledge of good and bad Because you will certainly not die; because your eyes will surely be opened; because you will become like God; because you will know good and evil	Adam and Eve	✓
Satan	Turn stones into bread Because you are the son of God; because you are hungry and you know how to satisfy your hunger by turning these stones into bread	Jesus; because man does not live by food alone, but by every word of God	✗
Satan	Jump and throw yourself down from the temple Because you are the son of God; Because the angels won't let anything bad happen to you when you expose yourself to danger	Jesus; Don't put God to the test	✗
Satan	Fall down and *worship* me Because I will give you all the kingdoms of the world and their glory;	Jesus; You are to *worship* Jehovah and to him alone you are to perform holy service	✗

It is worth noting the fact that sometimes a person's "why", the reason for his actions, lies in the future. In all animals and plants, the cause of their activity is before this activity, in the past: when it takes in water and nutrients (something that has already happened) it grows, when it receives solar radiation it photosensitizes, when it is hungry it hunts.

Sometimes a person's actions are not determined by what has been but by what will be, his "why" is in the future. For all beings on earth the cause of their actions has already happened, for man the cause of his actions can be what will happen because he can talk to Causality. Knowledge about the future in the hands of human, now, determine this future.

If there is a cause by which something happened – that cause is in the past; the reason for something happened – the reason is in the future. The cause by which something came into being is something or someone who is subject to Causality, but the reason for something happened can only be a person – someone who can predict the future, does something for the sake of what will happen or what he believes will happen.

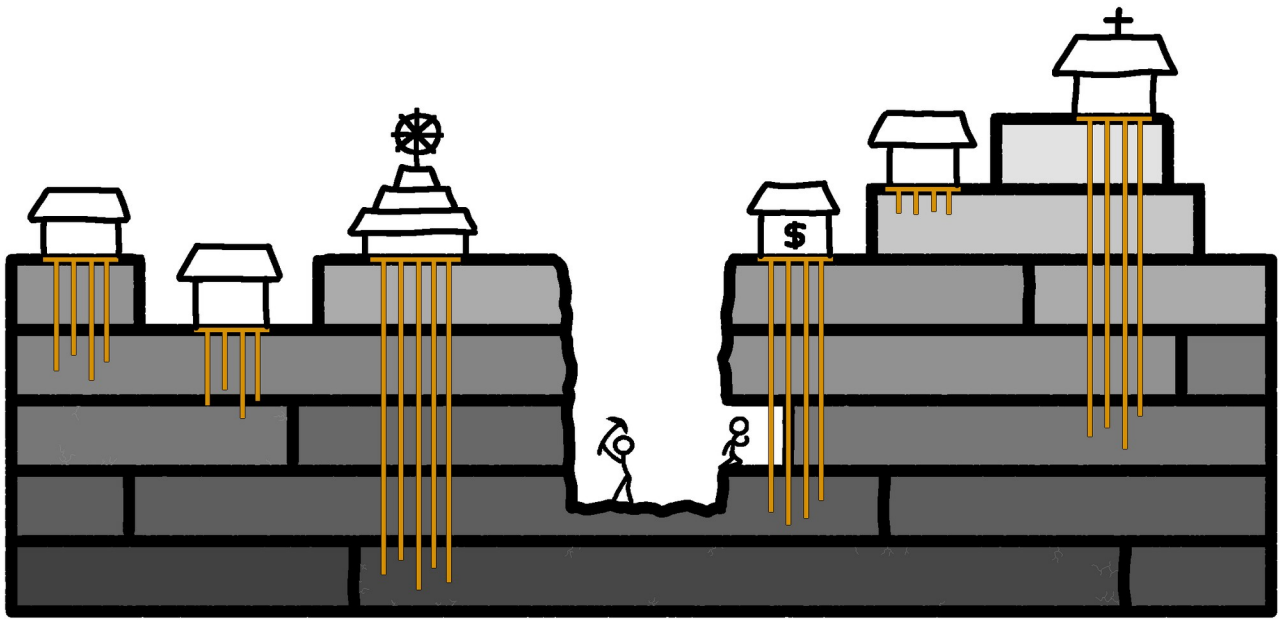
When a person has the holy spirit, he has the power that allows him to do the "will" of Causality.

Some adults, when you ask them "Why?" in relation to their own person, reacts unfavorably – this shows how far they have moved away from Causality, because the answer to this question is their will and not the will of Causality. They don't want to answer "Why?" because it would be a conversation with Causality that tells them the truth they do not want to know.

When one talks with Causality by asking the question "Why?" and is digging with this "Why?" into the foundations on which people and systems are standing (very often the foundations of high-level constructs), then one gets to the heart of the matter, then can be seen if these foundations are solid or not ,then one knows this "Why" and pulls out of the darkness of ignorance or lies into the light of truth mechanisms of the operation of the world and the system and one can see on what foundations are resting other people's lives, faith and confidence in the fulfillment of their desires.

“You have to go to school.”	“You can’t walk naked.”	“You have to do whatever god says!”
“Why?”	“Why?”	“Why?”
“To get a job.”	“Because it’s immoral.”	“Because if you don't you'll end up in hell.”
“Why?”	“Why?”	“Why?”
“Because you have to work to live.”	“Because people will get offended.”	“Because god punishes bad people.”
“Why?”	“Why?”	“Why?”
“To make money.”		
“Why?”		

Some structures are already on the ground, but another structures have pillars that are very deep – which does not mean that these pillars cannot stand on unstable foundations.



Through "Why" everything in the universe was created, so the active force of God is truly the Spirit of the Universe[104].

When you sin against the holy spirit then his power does not affect you, the "why" does not affect you and you do not do something because you have no "why", there is no reason to do it (something that has affected you before, some good reason to do it has turned in your eyes into a reason not worth worrying about, regardless of whether it is about something small or about a human life) – you are not active, you are not living. The penalty for the sin against the holy spirit is man's failure to respond to the cause that previously influenced him and pushed him to action, to life.

104 Genesis 1:2 (...) God's active force was moving about over the surface of the waters. ("Spirit of God" – NIV, KJV)

“Why would I do that?” – when the “why” is no longer important to you, then the “why” loses its power (the power to push you to act) and then you don't do it. The holy spirit, the "why" only affects you when the "why" is important to you. "Why" is important to a person only when he desires it. Many desires are stifled in childhood by others. When a desire is stifled, it does not give rise to a "why" and then nothing moves the person towards fulfilling this desire because it no longer exists. You have no strength to fight when the desire to fight is suffocated – because from desire comes strength, the strength to achieve this desire. He, who suffocates desire, suffocates life.

One who does not care about anything cannot sin against the holy spirit who leads to the goal of the desire that a person cares about. Some animals within their own species steal, commit adultery and kill, but in doing so they do not sin because they do not care about the consequences, they do not see them, they cannot, because they cannot talk to Causality to learn from it a future they do not care about.

Cause – something that causes an effect. If a cause does not cause an effect, it is not a cause.

The cause that directs and guides is this force – without it there is no effect. When you sin against the holy spirit, when you sin against the cause – then the cause does not act on you and you do not achieve the effect because you do not have this force, power from Causality. The cause does not affect you and does not do the effect because it loses its meaning, the goal loses its meaning, and when the goal loses its meaning, there is no need for a cause to push you towards the goal.

And this is no longer a cause because it does not influence the object to move – whatever this cause is: a logical argument or brute force – then logical arguments do not appeal to you and physical blows or whippings will not be able to force you to do anything. That is why, among other things, the child lives a full life in the world of children's constructs that influence him.

The sin against the holy spirit makes the cause to not produce the effect. Without a cause that does not produce an effect, eternity cannot occur.

Without the human mind in contact with Causality, the human mind decays; without man's bond with God, the human brain dies, turns into mush for which nothing is important because there is no "why" anymore – because it has abandoned the "why" that Causality gives. He, who does not listen to Causality, destroys his mind.

When you sin against the holy spirit, the cause does not affect you. Life is a network of cause and effect relationships, if the cause does not affect you, it does not have an effect on you and there cannot be an activity called life. The power of Causality pushes to action which is such an essential part of life that by acting against this power, against the holy spirit, the journey along the life path of Causality is halted. When you sin against it over and over again, parts of life (the constructs that make it up) are continually subtracted away until eventually nothing remains. When you sin against "why" you can't live forever, all people do that.

When a cause does not act on something/someone, it is no longer subject to Causality. Causality leaves and the path becomes absolute, completely separated from the world ruled by Causality.
When you feel no shame, *there is no reason* why you get dressed;
When you don't feel hungry, *there is no cause* that pushes you to look for food.
Then the only "why" can be found solely within you and not affect you from outside; then the answer to the question: "Why?" is: "Because I wanted to".

...therefore, the sin against the holy spirit is unforgivable because no one or nothing can forgive it – there is no sacrifice for this sin, no sacrifice from outside. You can't fix something if there is no reason for it.

When the lender ceases to exist, the debt to him ceases to exist. When the valuable thing he lent you loses its value, then it is impossible to return that value back to him. Causality is eternal, so the debt of sin against the Holy Spirit, which it gives, will never cease to exist.

The holy spirit is from God through the reality that He creates, through the truth that He makes known – and truth can be presented in the form of words – that is why Jesus did not speak everything directly to people in words (but through parables and comparisons) because then they could sin against the holy spirit. If people do not see the truth that can be seen with the naked eye, will they listen to someone who will speak about it in words?

You can't sin against something you don't know or see. Some people don't want to see the truth. Forcing them to look at it directly will only make them look away from it, but they will be aware of it, and therefore they will sin against it.

He, who does not submit to the guidance of Causality, will not receive from it the power to act. Submitting to the guidance of Causality means – exposing yourself to causes (the more causes the greater the effect) so that (through you) they make the effect. He, who fortifies himself against evil and does not allow evil to act on him, he will not receive from Causality the power to overcome it.

Without the holy spirit in man, man cannot live forever – and at the same time, man is not given the possibility of having the holy spirit, when it is known, that he will sin against it.

When you live forever, there is no *final* "why" because you live *forever*, therefore there is no final purpose in life. There is no ultimate goal of eternal life – so predicting it is pointless. If the final goal of human life were achieved, life would end – the goal is to explore the unknown, the front of Causality. Many people are trying to calculate this eternity but it leads to destroying their body and not living in the present. Eternity belongs to God who creates it for everyone to unburden them from eternity and thinking about the future – and man only has to obey God's commandments in the present so that Causality creates the future from them – eternally.

The Bible is tainted

If God's word is the truth, then his written word *must* reflect reality.

Over the centuries, various distortions have occurred in translations of the Holy Scriptures, whether due to linguistic/grammatical differences, lack of appropriate words to preserve the original meaning, prevailing beliefs and ideas, copyrights, or simply conscious human interference. Examples include the use of expressions such as: God/Jehovah/Lord, cross/stake, wealth/money in various translations. Because this has happened, the Bible has been undeniably tainted.

Verses of other translations		Verses from the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures	
You cannot serve both God and money.	Matthew 6:24 (NIV); mammon – KJV	You cannot slave for God and for Riches	mammon (money - any amount) and wealth (unspecified amount)
Now this is eternal life: that they **know** you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.	John 17:3 (NIV); that they might know thee - KJV; "Knowing" - once and for all	This means everlasting life, their **coming to know** you, the only true God (...)	"coming to know" - a process that not ended
Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.	Matthew 17:21 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Mark 9:29	-	deleted verses
For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.	Matthew 18:11 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here the words of Luke 19:10	-	Removed
Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.	Matthew 23:14 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Mark 12:40 and Luke 20:47	-	Removed
If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.	Mark 7:16 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here the words of 4:23	-	Removed
Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.	Mark 9:44 and Mark 9:46 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here the words of verse 48	-	Removed
But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.	Mark 11:26 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Matthew 6:15	-	Removed
And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith: And he was numbered with the transgressors.	Mark 15:28 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Luke 22:37	-	Removed
Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.	Luke 17:36 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Matthew 24:40		Removed
(For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)	Luke 23:17 (KJV); Some manuscripts include here words similar to Matthew 27:15 and Mark 15:6		Removed
For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.	John 5:4 (KJV)		Removed

And every man went unto his own house.	John 7:53 (KJV)		Removed
And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.	Acts 8:37 (KJV)		Removed
Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.	Acts 15:34 (KJV)		Removed
But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands.	Acts 24:7 (KJV)		Removed
And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.	Acts 28:29 (KJV)		Removed
The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.	Romans 16:24 (KJV)		Removed
But about the Son he says, "Your throne, O God, will last for ever and ever; a scepter of justice will be the scepter of your kingdom".	Hebrews 1:8 (NIV) The verse implies that Jesus is God.	But about the Son, he says: "God is your throne forever and ever, and the scepter of your Kingdom is the scepter of uprightness".	Divergence of meaning
When the woman saw that the fruit of the tree was good for food and pleasing to the eye, and also **desirable for gaining wisdom**, she took some and ate it. She also gave some to her husband, who was with her, and he ate it.	Genesis 3:6 (NIV)	Consequently, the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was something desirable to the eyes, yes, **the tree was pleasing to look at**. So she began taking of its fruit and eating it. Afterward, she she also gave some to her husband when he was with her, and he began eating it	Divergence of meaning
Then the Lord said, “My Spirit will not contend with humans forever, for they are mortal; their days will be a hundred and twenty years.”	Genesis 6:3 (NIV); "My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he **also is** flesh" (KJV)	Then Jehovah said: "My spirit will not tolerate man indifinitely, because he **is only** flesh. Accordingly, his days will amount to 120 days".	The verse implies that man, apart from the body, is something more.
God said to Moses, “I am who I am. This is what you are to say to the Israelites: ‘I am has sent me to you.’”	Exodus 3:14 (NIV, KJV)	So God said to Moses: "I Will Become What I Choose to Become". And he added: "This is what you are to say to the Israelites, 'I Will Become has sent me to you' "	

Jesus answered him, “Truly I tell you, **today you will be with me in paradise**.”	Luke 23:43 (NIV; similiar sense in KJV) The comma in this sentence is in the right place because otherwise the use of the word "today" would be unnecessary.	And he said to him: "**Truly I tell you today**, you will be with me in Paradise"	Inconsistent time; (paradise for the mind?) The word "today" might as well not be there, the meaning of the sentence would be retained. Never before when he used this phrase "truly I tell you" did he use the word "today".
But his flesh upon him shall have pain, and **his soul** within him shall mourn.	Job 14:22 (KJV)	He feels pain only while he is still in his flesh; He mourns only while **he is still alive**.	
Again the anger of the Lord burned against Israel, and he incited David against them, saying, “Go and take a census of Israel and Judah.”	2 Samuel 24:1 (NIV, KJV) The subject is God.	The anger of Jehovah again blazed against Israel when one incited David against them, saying: "Go, take a count of Israel and Judah."	The subject is not God. See: 1 Chronicles 21:1

NIV – New International Version
KJV – King James Version

In books of various content, it happens that the words are translated correctly but the meaning is translated incorrectly because no one knows it.

Apart from what is created, the Bible, however distorted it may be, remains the greatest echo of past history, listened to by millions of people.

Words (including written ones) have power only if they are true.

The Bible was written based on reality, on the basis of truth. This means that man is to build his faith not so much on the basis of the Bible, but on the basis of reality. If what you see with your senses is true and contradicts what the scriptures say, then the scriptures lie or you are misinterpreting them.

It is absolutely necessary when discussing the nature of God that it is impossible not to mention what speaks against:

#1 God is a living person

This widespread idea is preached in almost all religions of the world. To take a deeper look at this, let's consider what life is and what a person is. There is probably no doubt that man is a living person. If you took away a man's arms and legs, would he still live? Absolutely[105]. If an adult were blind, deaf, had no sense of smell or taste, would such a person still be alive?

Life. Because there are many species of beings on Earth, there are many *levels of complexity* of living beings. A worm is different from a bird, a chimpanzee can do more than a hedgehog. The more things that influence you, the higher your level of life. The more impulses you can receive, the higher the level of life, the more complex it is. Example: A plant cannot perceive (and respond to) sounds like an animal, an animal cannot predict the distant future like a human. Therefore, the key to determining level of life is whether you have the ability to respond to causes – to sound, light, data, impulses or anything else.

If a plant is something alive, and if a plant does not have animal or human senses, then a human being who has lost (or has not had since birth) his senses or limbs or other parts is also alive – more closer to the plant level.

> (...) I have come that they may have life and have it in abundance.
>
> John 10:10

Such a person has very limited interaction with the outside world because he does not receive most of the signals and information from it, just like a living plant that has no eyes or ears but still lives with everything it has.

> (...) you are worth more than many sparrows.
>
> Luke 12:7

The value of a being is assessed based on its features, skills, how many signals, impulses and information it can receive from the outside, and to what extent it can develop. To angels, people are worth a lot because people are the fulfillment of their desires.

In my search, I came across an interesting article that highlighted a particularly interesting difference between humans and the most developed creature in the animal world, the monkey:

> In the 1970s and the 1980s there had been suggestions that apes are unable to ask questions and to give negative answers. According to numerous published studies, apes are able to answer human questions, and the vocabulary of the acculturated apes contains question words. Despite these abilities, according to the published research literature, apes are not able to ask questions themselves, and in human-primate conversations, questions are asked by the humans only. Ann and David Premack's designed a potentially promising methodology to teach apes to ask questions in the 1970s: "In principle interrogation can be taught either by removing an element from a familiar situation in the animal's world or by removing the element from a language that maps the animal's world. It is probable that one can induce questions by purposefully removing key elements from a familiar situation. Suppose a chimpanzee received its daily ration of food at a specific time and place, and then one day the food was not there. A chimpanzee trained in the interrogative might inquire "Where is my food?" or, in Sarah's case, "My food is?" Sarah was never put in a situation that might induce such interrogation because for our purposes it was easier to teach Sarah to answer questions".
> A decade later Premacks wrote: "Though she [Sarah] understood the question, she did not herself ask any

105 See: Nick Vujicic

> questions—unlike the child who asks interminable questions, such as What that? Who making noise? When Daddy come home? Me go Granny's house? Where puppy? Toy? Sarah never delayed the departure of her trainer after her lessons by asking where the trainer was going, when she was returning, or anything else". Despite all their achievements, Kanzi and Panbanisha also have not demonstrated the ability to ask questions so far. Joseph Jordania suggested that the ability to ask questions could be the crucial cognitive threshold between human and other ape mental abilities. Jordania suggested that asking questions is not a matter of the ability to use syntactic structures, that it is primarily a matter of cognitive ability.

Wikipedia, Primate cognition, Asking questions and giving negative answers

> Jack was the pet and assistant of double leg amputee signalman James Wide, who worked for the Cape Town–Port Elizabeth Railway service. James "Jumper" Wide had been known for jumping between railcars until an accident where he fell and lost both of his legs. To assist in performing his duties, Wide purchased the baboon named Jack in 1881, and trained him to push his wheelchair and to operate the railways signals under supervision.
> An official investigation was initiated after a concerned member of the public reported that a baboon was observed changing railway signals at Uitenhage near Port Elizabeth.
> After initial skepticism, the railway decided to officially employ Jack once his job competency was verified. The baboon was paid twenty cents a day, and half a bottle of beer each week. It is widely reported that *in his nine years of employment with the railway company, Jack never made a single mistake*.

Wikipedia, Jack (baboon)

If the most skillful being of the animal world does not have the ability to ask questions – and therefore does not have the ability to inquire *why* certain things are the way they are – then the lower forms of life also lack this ability; they simply accept reality as it is, without asking questions about it. Only the human species is created in the image of God. Moreover, only people can talk to God because they can ask the question: "Why?".

No animal knows the path to wisdom and understanding that comes from asking questions.

> No bird of prey knows the path to it;
> The eye of a black kite has not seen it.
> No majestic beasts have trodden on it;
> The young lion has not prowled here.

Job 28:7,8 see also Job 39:14-17

Asking questions to find the truth is a conversation with God, because truth is the word of God.

So only man (and not any lower forms of life such as animals or plants) can talk to God. Looking at different types of beings on Earth, we come to the conclusion that life is not equal to another life. And just as men are worth more than many sparrows, so one man is worth more than millions of monkeys, animals and plants that came before him.

> Biological processes are those processes that are vital for an organism to live, and that shape its capacities for interacting with its environment. Biological processes are made of many chemical reactions or other events that are involved in the persistence and transformation of life forms. [biological processes:] Homeostasis, organization, metabolism, growth, adaptation, response to stimuli, reproduction, interaction between organisms [and other].

Wikipedia, Biological process

> Life is a characteristic that distinguishes physical entities that have biological processes, such as signaling and self-sustaining processes, from those that do not, either because such functions have ceased (they have died) or because they never had such functions and are classified as inanimate. Various forms of life exist, such as plants, animals, fungi, protists, archaea, and bacteria. Biology is the science that studies life.

Wikipedia, Life

Many scientists view organisms as something that has come the way of evolution without Heavenly Providence. It cannot be hidden, but in living creatures I see a code that transforms the earth into living creatures. And this code – whether DNA or RNA or any other – causes this earth to begin to form a shape, and this code causes this earth to grow, photosynthesize, fly, walk, swim, see, build, think, replicate its own code. Is this code (and not its building blocks – atoms) from Earth or from Heaven?

Life is a coded being. A being that has a working code in it, code that is executed on it and on its surroundings.

Something is alive if it is currently executing this code, or this part of the code that is in it (therefore life is not matter but a process) – in some beings, from a certain moment, also in a developed data storage, in the brain. It executes the material code of the body, and then the non-material code of the mind. Death occurs when the execution of this code is interrupted. As long as there is God's code in man, man will live because the code of Causality is the code of life.

Life is not matter but a process, a process of executing code. Life consists of many activities, so many processes are performed simultaneously: breathing, pumping blood, digesting, receiving data (consciousness).

A plant seed contains DNA code but is not alive because it does nothing. Only when it is sown in the ground, it grows and sprouts – then it lives because the code works. Similarly, a fertilized human egg cell is alive because it also grows – it executes the code (DNA). Living means working; what works in it? Executing code.

Can a working robot die? If it does not execute its program, it will stop working – whatever this robot is and whatever program it is running. When there is no code, there is no program because a program consists of code. The program dies when it executes its code – unless there is new code to execute, to live. The creators of code do not interfere by writing new code until the previous code is completely executed. Can a robot function properly when there is false data in a real machine? Code based on false data cannot execute forever.

If the robot is not programmed, the robot cannot operate. If the robot does not have code, it cannot perform any activities. The code must have an end for the action to finally be performed and for the effort to end.

Code is data and information that can be executed. This data and information may be on a computer disk, in a physical cell of the organism, in a person's mind.

Code transforms, changes one into another. This happens when the code executes, when it works.

Every code that has a beginning has an end.

The first code (building the body – DNA) is the same in all people (exceptions are the color of skin, eyes, the part of the code responsible for gender, genetic diseases, etc.), just like the code of an animal or plant species, but the second code (building the spirit, mind or whatever else you call it) is various – it consists of the teachings and beliefs we follow, the code we execute.

It is the spirit that is life-giving; the flesh is of no use at all. The sayings that I have spoken to you are spirit and are life.	(...) What I teach is not mine, but belongs to him who sent me.	(...) your word is truth.
John 6:63	John 7:16	John 17:17

The code is life-giving – God's utterances, God's word is a code that continues itself, continues life. True code is life-giving – false code causes life to reach a dead end.

It is the code that gives life. The code is in the mind. The body alone cannot live at the human level. Everything that is in the mind gives life to human: the knowledge that a person uses, the emotions and feelings that push a person to action, the word of Causality that makes a person act on it – by suffocating and rejecting all this, one makes a person dead because there is nothing that drives him to live anymore.

God is the giver of code. Code gives life. One who is not subject to Causality certainly will not live.

The body is simply earth – it has been transformed by code, so the material body is a manifestation of an immaterial code that was able to bend matter to its purpose. Actions are a manifestation of the code of the human spirit. Only a true code can manifest in a true body – therefore false ideas and teachings will cause the body carrying them to cease to exist – as a false code that cannot manifest itself in the form of a body. True code creates a true body, false code cannot create a body or make it live.

The more complex this code of life is, the more complex this life is. The more complex this code is, the more complex is the execution of this code – the structure and behavior of the coded entity.

Where there is no code, entropy reigns, but code creates more and more order. Orderliness is something that is relative.

Life is not only matter but above all process – therefore, he who attaches more importance to matter than to process – destroys his life.

Don't let anyone take away your ability to execute the Divine Code – because then they take away your life.

Human is a coded entity; Executes code = acts = lives. So it's no wonder that some people feel useless or undervalued when they do nothing – especially among the lower classes, where the lack of means to live fully deprives them of this life, deprives them of action.

Jesus, while on Earth, executed the code by which man's life is created, the code by which, if man executes it, man will certainly live – even if the material physical body is destroyed, this immaterial code will create it again. This is the code of (human) life and resurrection, it is a code given by God through Jesus.

A corporeal, material being is alive if it executes the code found in its body.
A spiritual, immaterial being lives if it executes the code found in its mind.
He who does not follow God's code will not live.

A person exists if a person acts and performs the activities of a person. Life exists if the life code works. Matter cannot exist without its attribute: gravity. A thing exists if it exhibits activities, attributes, and actions that define that thing. If something does something, then these actions define that something. If something does not work, does not display the attributes of this something, does not display the activities of this something, then this something does not exist or it is something else.

An entity is alive if the entity is active. Executing code causes activity. From Causality through plants, animals to man. From the lowest levels of beings to the highest levels of beings. From the simplest executable code (cause → effect) on which all other codes are based (on which all robots are based and thanks to which all inorganic and organic machines operate), to the most complex ones that allow to create constructs found nowhere else. It is the simplest code that is the building block of everything else – therefore, anything created without it is doomed to fall.

Mere existence is not living because the mere existence of a code is not the execution of the code.

One can only live now, in the present. A person who runs away from the present does not live.

Man is subject to Causality. The Angel is subject to Causality. The robot is subject to Causality. Therefore, sometimes it is difficult to distinguish what is alive from what is dead. Even a stone contains a code, as a material object with *gravity* that allows it to affect other objects – as an object with a *code* that allows it to affect other objects. If life is made up of parts that don't live, where is that life? Therefore, life is possible only when if part of it is Causality that has life in itself.

Causality is what makes the individual links of a chain to overlap to form one chain.
What is living consists of what is not living put into action (into life) by Causality – therefore, only through the eyes of death can one understand more deeply life itself and actions of people.

> But wisdom – where can it be found, and where is the source of understanding?
> No man recognizes its value, and it cannot be found in the land of the living.
>
> It has been hidden from the eyes of every living thing and concealed from the birds of the heavens.
> Destruction and death say, ‘Our ears have heard only a report of it.’

Job 28:12, 13, 21, 22

When it comes to man, the most important activity that stands out in the Bible when describing this living creature is:

> Everything on dry land that had the breath of life in its nostrils died.

Genesis 7:22

> And Jehovah God went on to form the man out of dust from the ground and to blow into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living person

Genesis 2:7

Interestingly, in the case of Jesus, the interruption of breathing did not lead to his complete death:

> And Jesus called out with a loud voice and said:
> "Father, into your hands I entrust my spirit".
> After he said this, he expired.

Luke 23:46 "yielded up his spirit" – Matthew 27:50 "he gave up his spirit" – John 19:30, "and gave up the ghost" – John (KJV) "he breathed his last." - Luke (NIV)

> A mortal lives not through that breath that flows in and that flows out. The source of his life is another and this causes the breath to flow.

Katha Upanishad, part 5

In the carnal man, what causes the flow of air is the suffering caused by its lack. Consciousness is necessary to suffer.

It is worth noting that during the 6 days of creation, animals and humans were said to be living souls, which was not said about plants.

In the beginning, as now, all plants and animals die, which is good and just – they cannot multiply indefinitely on the finite surface of the planet. Jesus is more than an animal that dies, an animal or plant that is "only dust[106]". Matter in nature is constantly changing, while ideas in the brain (material carrier) based (not on falsehood but) on truth (which is the word of God that gives life[107]) are eternal – they cannot be destroyed because the truth from which these ideas arose in man cannot be destroyed. For a machine to run forever, it must have an infinite source of energy.

> For by him we have life and move and exist, even as some of your own poets have said: 'For we are also his children'.
>
> Acts 17:28

Plants are also mechanisms that are subject to causality. When sown in the ground, appropriate processes begin, written in code in the seed, which germinates, produces leaves and flowers – does the machine necessarily have to be made of metal? Just a few centuries ago, some people believed that crystals were living entities.

Being	**Properties and skills**
Matter, atoms and particles, earth, dust	**Existence** – the natural property of all matter which is made from energy;
Viruses	Pieces of code (not of computer but of) matter; **Interaction** – these entities interact with other organisms; **Replication** – this entity has the ability to duplicate itself;
Bacteria	
Fungi	
Plants	**Growth** – the possibility of increasing its volume;
Animals	**Movement** – the body can travel long distances; **Consciousness**; **Feelings** (such as anger or love); Developed **memory**;
Human	Ability to ask **questions** – inquisitiveness as to *why* that's how things are;

One life can move, feel feelings, be aware of something and the other cannot, one life can ask questions and the other cannot. These are levels of life – based on their abilities.

The laws of inanimate matter also govern material beings.
If the most complicated plant is a mechanism that responds to appropriate stimuli then the fertilized human embryo is also a material mechanism that responds appropriately to the stimuli received. The difference is that this embryo will give rise to – if it is not destroyed – an adult human being, therefore whoever destroys an embryo that will surely become an adult human being destroys future life, however imperfect it may be. Of course, this does not apply to the sperm itself or the egg cell, which can only be fertilized.

Does he who destroys the embryo destroy the future adult life? You cannot destroy something that has not come into being. It does not exist ~~yet~~, so how can you destroy it? You have destroyed the embryo, you have not destroyed the adult, which does not exist. Don't regret what will never come to be, because it doesn't exist – and it never will be.

106 Genesis 3:19
107 John 12:50 and John 17:17

The human body begins to exist after the fertilization of an egg, so neither a separate reproductive cell of the father nor a separate reproductive cell of the mother is a part of a living person (but is its building material), just as a severed arm or leg is not a part of a person. What will never be human is not worth as much as a human. This body in the womb is not the mother, but another body because he does not have the mother's DNA, only his own – she has it inside her and he is at her mercy.

Is it wrong to kill such an unborn human for any reason? If it is bad then it should have bad consequences, if it has bad consequences then what are they?

- For this fetus, the consequence will simply be termination of life – it does not consider it something bad because this requires awareness which it does not have.
- For the mother who carried it, the result will be psychological consequences proportional to the level of attachment to that child – from zero psychological impact to depression leading to suicide. The more we value something, the higher the value, the more we grieve its loss. A fetus has no more value than an adult because it does not have what an adult has.
- There will be similarly proportionate consequences for the person who kills this fetus.

Consequences and effects are given by Causality, therefore no man can be a judge[108] because no man knows all causes except Causality. "Your judgment of me is not absolute because you will never be able to take into account all the reasons that pushed me to do this act". A woman who knowingly kills her child is the cause of its death, but I am not the result that judges and punishes her for it. Instead of killing an unborn child, it is better to get rid of the cause (or the cause of the cause) that would cause the child to be killed.

Something is ours if we have control over it.
People have no control over their own lives if they want to live forever and die.
What you have control over, is yours. Do you feel in control of what you have?

A parent's child is not 100% his own. His parent didn't program his DNA, so he doesn't know how it works. When one of his organs breaks down, he doesn't know how to fix it. Unlike a built robot, it can only be controlled to a certain extent – isn't human life susceptible to external programming? If you didn't build your child and got it from another builder, you don't know how it functions and it may act against your will. A programmer's robot follows the programmer's commands, no one else's.

When you kill an unborn child, you kill the body itself, not the spirit, because the fetus has no spirit. The human body itself is not in the image of God, the invisible mind is because God is invisible. Soul is mind, empty mind is zero, you can't kill nothingness. Something that sleeps and has never woken up, never used consciousness or memory. A mind that has not yet been born cannot die. When things get dangerous, it's better to save the body with the mind, the mother, than the body without the mind, the fetus[109]. Something that has no mind cannot suffer when it is killed because suffering is a state of mind. An unborn child is not a person because for a person to exist there must be a mind. If the organism has the code (DNA) of a human, then this body is a body of the human – if the mind has the code of a person, then this mind is a person. For the mind to be the mind of a person, it cannot be empty.

108 John 8:11 (NIV) (...) "Then neither do I condemn you," Jesus declared. "Go now and leave your life of sin." ("go, and sin no more" - KJV)

109 Job 3:10-16 (...) Why did I not die at birth? Why did I not perish when I came from the womb? (...) Or why was I not like a hidden miscarriage, like children who have never seen the light?

The corporeal, emotional being looks at the fetus and has whatever feelings the emotional being can have. It is "sweet", "innocent", "how can you kill it?", the body defends the body because it sees nothing beyond that – because it is nothing beyond that; the body with corporeal eyes can only see what is material. The reasoning, immaterial, coldly calculating mind has awareness because it sees not only through its corporeal eyes – so it can see what is beyond the material, and what is in the material.

Doesn't brain activity in a fetus prove that it has a mind? This unconscious brain activity controls body functions, action and response to bodily impulses – so a fetus can be aware of its body. A fetus cannot be aware of its mind. This brain activity in a fetus is also present in animals. Therefore, brain activity in a fetus does not prove that a human fetus is a person.

Having children is for the parent's own benefit – especially if those children are born in difficult times or inconvenient conditions – then one might actually think that giving birth to such a child is not for the child's good.

The coded entity executes its code for its own benefit – the benefit of having that code executed. In encoded organisms, pleasure comes from the process of execution of the code, not from the end of execution of the code – pleasure from eating, not from being full, pleasure from sex, not from having offspring, pleasure from an action, not from the result of that action.

It has always been like this, even in the animal world – because having offspring is the fulfillment of the implanted desire of the one who produces offspring – reproduction is the fulfillment of the purpose of the coded organism that executes this code. Reproduction is programmed in the organism and the execution of this code is the fulfillment of the desire of the coded being – even if it does not look to the good of the offspring – it only cares about the execution of the code. This is the case in the world of plants, animals and corporeal man.

The body executes the code of the body, the mind executes the code of the mind. He who is only the body executes the code of the body and strives to reproduce without looking to the future. He who is not only the body looks with the eyes of his mind at the good of the one who may (but does not have to) be born and at his future.

How can one give birth to and raise one's children in toil, fully devoting oneself to them – how can one do this for one's own benefit and profit? These raised children *are* the benefit and profit of the parent. This is called love. The result in the form of profit and benefit is not always private property.

Code written by someone else and executed by you may not always bring benefits to you – because the code is not yours.

"I am pro-life!" I am in favor of a life that has meaning and can actually be lived. By destroying the code of suffering that is just beginning to be executed, this suffering will never occur.

Life is a construct because it is constructed. If you want to live, you must obey the law that makes life possible: "Do not kill."

One who exists for a short time and often exposes himself to danger for a higher idea lives more than one who is very old and exists because the former executes a lot of code and the latter performs little.

What is the cause of life? Living constructs were created, ranging from the least complex living constructs to the most complex living constructs. Life comes only from existing life. Causality that existed always has life in itself. It is life at the lowest level, different from other forms of life, so the process of creating another life took a very long time. Creation/evolution is creation by Causality. Causality is what created Heaven and Earth, and the universe and its laws. Over millions of years of evolution, Causality created the world, but man was also created by angels[110].

Causality formed the foundations of logic and is the basis of "intelligent" design.

For centuries, people have been trying to explain the creation of the world with a personal god, but the planet is formed when Causality glues together boulders, particles of dust and minerals in a vacuum, forming a giant ball; Causality creates mountains as tectonic plates are moving across the Earth's mantle; Causality sends rain when water particles evaporate from the seas and oceans; bees do not consciously create hexagonal honeycombs themselves; spiders do not plan their next steps when they build their web; perfectly symmetrical geometric shapes found in nature are not the work of a personal god but of Causality; the DNA code must be built by rational intelligence but the desire to build it is given by Causality.

Everything that is subject to Causality carries out the will of God; then God acts – through what is subject to him.

Everything that is subject to man and that he has control over is part of man: thoughts, limbs or even other people. Everything that the system governs is part of the system. Everyone who is affected by an idea, is part of that idea. Everything that Causality governs and controls is part of God.

An immaterial code (DNA or of the mind) can only be created by an immaterial mind.

In the process of creation, Causality used everything and everyone that did not have their own will, because something that does not have its own will belongs to Causality and Causality controls it: atoms, plants, animals and even people. Then God uses it to create. A domino piece does not have its own will and desires – it reacts accordingly to what falls on it. Only this, and he who does not have his own desires and will, can perform the "will" of Causality. First humans fled from God and his will when he called them and hid among the trees of desires of the garden. Similarly, God speaks through something/someone that has no will of its own; The Word of Causality travels through something/someone that has no desires of its own – then the "will" and "desire" of Causality happens.

Something is yours if you have control over it, and it is a part of you to the extent you have control over it. The smaller your property, the easier it is for you to control it.

You are what you have control over;
You only have control over what you are aware of.

110 Genesis 1:26 Then God said: "Let us make man in our image, according to our likeness (...)"

Eternal.

> This means everlasting life, their coming to know you, the only true God, and the one whom you sent, Jesus Christ.

John 17:3 "that they know you" – NIV "that they might know thee" – KJV

Exploration is a continuous process, just like eternal life – subsequent events in the chain of causality are constantly discovered. You can't know the future *once*, because then you don't live forever to *keep getting* to know it over and over again. Once known, it is no longer getting to know. That's why it's important to have something to explore Causality with all your senses. By not turning your eyes away from it and not covering your ears to it, then it will influence you and make you live – live with everything you have.

Eternal life is an effect, not a cause. Eternal life is the result of execution of the code. Eternal life is not the reason why the code executes. When the code executes, life continues. Life doesn't last for code to execute, because do you really want to live executing bad code?

Eternal life is an effect – that's why the tree of life was in the middle of the garden of Causality, just as the tree of knowledge of good and evil was in the middle of God's garden – knowing what is good and what is evil is an effect, not a cause – you are discovering what is good and what is evil, you do not establish yourself what is good and what is evil. The fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil is the only thing you cannot take yourself. Therefore, young children are guided by their childlike curiosity to see what is good and what is bad, they do not determine what is good and what is bad because they do not have their own desires for which things or activities would be good or bad to achieve these desires or goals. "What is good and what is bad?" – this is not you to decide yourself.

The tree of eternal life and the tree of knowledge of good and evil are in the very center of the garden of God, at the end of the path, not before – because they are not any cause but the ultimate effect. Why can't we see people living forever today? Because eternity is the ultimate goal, the ultimate effect for which there are still no adequate causes.

Life is not the cause by which actions are performed, actions are the cause by which life exists – this is why many people don't do anything because they think they will die anyway, but it is actions that cause life. "It's not worth doing it, because the end will come anyway" – and it is this action that causes the end of action not to come.

People give up *because* they know they will die, but the *result* of not giving up is eternal life.

No: "I have to do this to continue to live", but: "I don't want to continue to live doing this". "I won't live such a life."

Eternal life is impossible if the living executes the code that leads to his death.

Life lasts only when the code of life executes continuously. The code executes continuously only when it is subject to Causality. It is subject to Causality only when its parts are true – they do not contain untruths and lies that do not exist because they lead to non-existence – thereby dragging what they build (life) to death. A life built of lies dies.

There are many religions that talk about eternal life, whether on Earth or elsewhere. People replicate themselves to replicate this religion, to spread the belief that people will not die, and yet those who are replicated die. Creating children who die to talk about immortality...

> If the T. dohrnii jellyfish is exposed to environmental stress, physical assault, or is sick or old, it can revert to the polyp stage, forming a new polyp colony. It does this through the cell development process of transdifferentiation, which alters the differentiated state of the cells and transforms them into new types of cells.
>
> Theoretically, this process can go on indefinitely, effectively rendering the jellyfish biologically immortal, although in practice individuals can still die. In nature, most Turritopsis dohrnii are likely to succumb to predation or disease in the medusa stage without reverting to the polyp form.

Wikipedia, Turritopsis dohrnii

If a code, whether physical for the body like DNA, or mind for the spirit like ideas or teachings in a book, does not give eternal life, then that code is not worth executing when you are looking for eternal life. If any scriptures say that they give life and the person who fulfills them dies, it is not worth listening to them. People who listen to and idolize people of ideas who have died will also die – their ideas and teachings do not provide eternal life. If the code of life does not give eternal life, then it is not worth listening to, it is false.

If the laws and commandments of God cannot lead a person to a better life, then it is not worth following them – because then the cause does not make the effect: good deeds should produce good consequences. The lives of many people are terrible even when they follow the laws and commandments of God – this code.

If God's laws of good cannot lead you to eternal life so that you do not die just now, like the man Jesus, then it is not worth following them – or, perhaps – you do not *always and perfectly* follow what God says, because what God says is truth and you do not respond appropriately to the truth, considering true values to be untrue and false values to be true.

> Jesus said to him: "If you want to be *perfect*, go sell your belongins and give to the poor, and you will have treasuer in heaven; and come be my follower."

Matthew 19:21

To live forever you must always listen to what God says. A person always takes breaths of air, he does not stop them. Following the chain of causality, you see that it always has its links of events. When you interrupt the events that make up life, you interrupt life.

> And the One who sent me is with me; he did not abandon me to myself, because I always do the things pleasing to him.

John 8:29

Only those who are controlled by God (who are willing to obey God) can live forever, not simply exist, live – only the code that is subject to God can exist and continue to execute because it walks the uninterrupted path of Causality. Only what is ruled by God, and only those who are subject to Causality, can live forever because they walk an endless chain of cause and effect. Only the one who lives forever and conquers death is 100% right about how to live so that this life does not end. The one who dies is not right about how to live.

Eternal life is the result of listening to Causality. Human can live forever only when he listens to God. When the body and mind are subject to Causality. When man listens to Causality then God puts a code in him: commandments, teachings, ideas, truths, things that man does. Man lives forever if what he has in his head exists forever – these truths do not give up, do not cease, do not perish, just like eternal Causality from which they come. Lies and untrue things that man may have in his mind do not exist forever – so man dies with them.

The path of goodness is not worth following if it does not lead to eternal life. Good deeds should cause good conditions, good conditions (both inside and outside a person) should make a person want to live in them, and that desire to live should cause eternal life – the ultimate goal which is achieved on every step. Deeds of good make a person live forever – deeds of evil make the person committing them not only live but just exist, because his code exists but it is not executed because there are no conditions for it to be executed, there are no conditions for it to be executed because deeds of evil do not create good conditions, because of these actions it is impossible to live in paradise conditions – the same awaits Satan and demons in the abyss of limiting existence, not life[111].

If these things cannot be achieved by serving God with your goodness and devotion, then it is not worth serving God. Causality gives you the reward for your labor when you serve it – the effect for the cause that is your work.

Jesus did not prove that eternal life to the fullest, along with fulfilling the dreams, aspirations, desires and hopes of the average earthly person, is possible – he only proved that death can be defeated – but without living the life to its fullest.

Even if the average Smith learned from Jesus how to be immortal, he certainly would not want to live forever in the world of this system. Even if a person who once died were resurrected today, would he still want to live in today's world? Therefore, before the resurrection takes place, the world must be changed and make people want to live in it. It's people who change the world. The world is people.

> Yes, God looked upon the earth, and is was ruined;
> all flesh had ruined its way on the earth.

Genesis 6:12 "for all the people on earth had corrupted their ways" – NIV

How can the dead be resurrected if there is still something in the world that is killing them and if there are bad living conditions? When they are resurrected, are they to be killed again by these things? If people do not create conditions for life on earth for body and spirit, resurrection will not be possible, because there is nothing to come back to.

Man cannot live forever because man himself *does not want* to live forever – in the conditions that prevail in him or in his surroundings. You can't live forever in a place where you don't want to live. Where the code cannot be executed, the code does not execute.

The first humans were not bothered by the conditions around them – they did not die because of them. They died because of the conditions that appeared inside them.

Without the forgiveness of sins, eternal life is impossible. When the constructs against which one was guilty die, sin and guilt cease to exist.

Satan's idea of a personal god distanced people from the source of life, which is God who continues life, Causality.

What is the reason that makes man live forever? These are good conditions inside, in the mind of man. Conditions you want to live in. Without peace of mind, eternal life is impossible. Man's desires that cause stress disturb his peace of mind.

111 Matthew 25:41 (...) everlasting fire prepared for the Devil and his angels.
Revelation 20:10 And the Devil who was misleading them was hurled into the lake of fire and sulfur (...)

Because man himself is imperfect, the possibility of eternal life in man's current state was taken away from him[112] so that he would simply not suffer forever.

God alone himself expelled man from the place where eternal life could be obtained – Causality blocked the path to eternal life.

> So he drove the man out, and he posted at the east of the garden of E'den the cherubs and the flaming blade of a sword that was turning continuously to guard the way to the tree of life.
>
> Genesis 3:24

For a simple reason, we cannot live forever: the path to eternal life has been almost irreversibly blocked for us – so that we do not suffer forever. Not that anyone took it then – it was a consequence of the actions of the first people.

Previously, the tree of life was not guarded by cherubim or a spinning sword. Causality put them there – the reason why they were there was because a man in lie picked a fruit from the tree of wisdom. Man will be able to take fruit from the tree of life if #1 he abandons his willful determination of judgment of what is good and what is evil, but he will be guided by Causality that tells him what is good and what is evil, which is symbolized by the fiery sword that will kill his personal self-understanding of good and evil, and #2 if man abandons the lie in which he has been entangled, the lie of a personal god – which was represented by the guarding cherub. These two things stand in the way of eternal life. Eve was not deceived by the attempted lie because both Adam and Eve knew the truth from Causality. Eve was seduced by the temptation of wisdom – her new desire – and Adam was seduced by his desire – her. God did not tell people about the advantages of this fruit; God told them about its disadvantages. What people first noticed were the flaws and dangers of this fruit.

Only that which is subject to Causality can enter the garden of Causality and take the fruit of the tree of eternal life. That which is not subject to Causality and he who does not obey Causality are driven out of the garden of God by Causality and cannot take the fruit of eternal life.

For something to live forever, it must #1 eternally receive strength to live from the outside or #2 have life within itself.

That which has life in itself lives forever. It has in itself a running code that executes forever, it doesn't need any other code to keep it alive, to keep its code executing. God breathed into man's nostrils the breath of life, and man's body had life in itself. Without this "life in itself", a person certainly cannot live forever – one must get rid of everything that takes away from him to have "life in itself". Everything that makes a person dependent on something/someone else, makes it impossible for a person to have life in himself.

He who listens to Causality – he has life in himself and does not need the guidance of someone else (thus the rule of others will cease to exist when God will begin to rule); no one else has to rule over him and consequently – force his own will upon him. He who does not listen to Causality but listens to someone else – he is dependent on someone else and at his mercy, and his actions are directed by someone else – so his life is dependent on someone else and he has no life in himself.

You can live forever only if the life code of mind is not interrupted and is executed continuously. The code must be built from truths because no untruth or lie lasts forever. The code must give rise to desires – they cause its further execution and the creation of another code; the desire to live forever is the desire to execute code.

112 Genesis 3:22

Only he who is not only the body can live forever. By rejecting the word of Causality, man becomes only a body that perishes.

Eternal life comes from God – from nothing, no one else. When seeking eternal life, seek guidance only in Causality.

Something is immortal not because it is subject to Causality (plants, animals) but because it is in the image of God – a mind that can communicate with Causality – and thus obey it.

The one who lives forever is in no hurry – because he knows that he has enough time for everything. Eternity is in no hurry. He does not rush events – but he also does not delay events because eternal time is an eternal number of events and events must follow each other eternally if life is to last forever. When there are no events, time does not pass. The creation process took eons, but without steps a journey is impossible, just as a year is impossible without minutes.

If I myself do not know the way to the tree of eternal life and cannot pluck its fruit, I cannot show this way to others. The tree of life is in Paradise, the place where desires come true – if I cannot fulfill my desire, I am not in Paradise, if I am not in Paradise, I cannot eat the fruit from the tree of life, if I cannot eat the fruit from the tree of life, I cannot live – I don't want to live because I can't fulfill my desires.

Eternal life is only possible when desires are fulfilled. To fulfill man's desires, "desires" of God, his will, the intention of Causality must first be fulfilled. Eternal life certainly cannot exist when desires are not fulfilled. Causality shows the path to the place where desires are fulfilled. Causality blocks the way to the place where desires are fulfilled for those who do not obey it.

Man can live forever because only he can talk to Causality, can know the future from it – and it is new desire in man, which has not yet been fulfilled, and which is in the future – that is crucial for man to be able (and to want at all) to live in this future – and again, and once again – and forever. One can live forever only when one is certain that the desire that arises in man will be fulfilled in the future (no animal can do this) – this unwavering assurance of the fulfillment of this desire can be given only and exclusively by Causality.

People's behavior is partly caused by the fact that they do not believe that they can live forever – does anyone today believe that they can immediately gain eternal life by following the path that Jesus followed? The way of Jesus is the way of Causality – does anyone today recognize that Causality is God?

"But man doesn't live forever!" Man does not live forever because he does not want to live forever – in such conditions – in conditions for the body and the mind.

The life of one man in eternal suffering is suffering greater than the suffering of a billion people for a billion years.

A pathetic existence in suffering of the body, but also – and perhaps above all – of the mind, cannot be prolonged forever. There are two ways out of this situation: #1 Let the life that suffers die; #2 Remove the cause of suffering. You can remove the cause of suffering when you have the strength to remove it, but when you don't have the strength, it is ~~usually~~ always option #1. Strength comes from God when you bend your knee before Him and humbly ask: "Why?" His answer is also the strength you need. His answer, his word is like a code for you to follow. When you don't execute this code, the power you needed won't manifest itself. Similarly, if you do not want to live in the world of this system, you can: #1 Change the world, living conditions, #2 leave the world.

Just like the fruit from the tree of knowledge of good and bad, you cannot take the fruit from the tree of life, it must be given to you – by God. Otherwise, a catastrophe will occur – when evil, eternal people will take over the Earth. It must be given to you by Causality – a cause that is not of you, for the cause to be within you.

Man does not live by food alone, but man lives by every word that passes through Jehovah's mouth, Causality – man lives by the word of God when the cause affects man, when man allows the cause to influence him. When a person does not act on the cause, the person is dead – nothing moves a dead person, but children react to everything.

If you do not accept the truth, you do not accept the word of God, because the word of God is truth. Without accepting the word of God, one cannot be sanctified by the truth. Without accepting the word of God, one cannot gain eternal life because man does not live by food alone, but by every word that passes through the mouth of Causality.

Only the path of truth leads to life because life is something existing, true. A tree cannot exist with imaginary leaves. Bees cannot store honey in an imaginary hive. You can't buy something real for fake values.

He, who sees his path blocked, so that he believes he cannot pass through it, is then convinced that he will not reach its end, the goal which is his desire. Old people (with open eyes of their mind) see these obstacles causing loss of faith in the possibility of continuing along this path – that is why they always say: "...until the end of my life...". Small children do not see this blocking obstacle (and often do not see the path itself but walk aimlessly) so they do not lose faith in a successful journey along this path. This makes them live as if they were not going to die.

No evil lives forever – it can exist forever but not live life to the fullest – because evil sins against this life and against the source that gives this life.

When you live forever, you are not concerned about the danger that threatens your life, it does not cause you to defend yourself or worry about it. You become less sensitive, fewer things affect you, things you previously reacted to in order to survive.

Or – on the contrary: you live forever *because* you react to everything that life is throwing at you, and your reactions to it fuel your life.

If there is no cause – there is no effect, no human reaction to the cause. An immortal man does not react to factors that threaten his life.

The fear of death drives you to action, then what threatens you with death controls you. When you have immortality and live forever, there is no fear and all the things that threatened you fall into the abyss from which they can no longer influence you. Then all that remains is the fear of what is worse than death.

This is what distinguishes life from mere existence: responding to the cause, because Causality gives life.

Eternal life is an endless number of successive events – but man cannot keep doing the same thing over and over again. It's just boring – and then man doesn't react to the cause. That's why it's so important to explore the unknown.

When the code you are executing conflicts with the code of eternal life (for example, when you are destroying your body with drugs or destroying your mind with lies), you will never execute the code of eternal life.

If every code has a beginning and an end, can the same code execute forever? Can human code live forever?

If the code has a beginning and an end, its execution must come to an end. When the first code is complete (the body code), the next code (the spirit code) and the next code, and the next appear in the human being, and the human executes them one by one. When a person executes one code all the time, in a loop, he gets bored and monotony arises, and sometimes even torment caused by the lack of an exit (from the repeating loop). You are trapped. You don't know the unknown. The code repeats itself. Events repeat themselves. Déjà vu.

Jesus came to Earth and executed the code – activities that resulted in resurrection, instilling in people the faith that man can live forever and preaching the good news about the possibility of immortality for every person (gospel). The code has been executed, there is no reason to execute it again – after it comes a new code previously unknown (The Revelation of St. John), but the new code will not occur if the previous one is not done.

If a code, whether of a body, or of a mind, a book, of a science, or of an idea, cannot be executed, then the code is useless or it is being executed in an inappropriate environment – you do not plant apple seeds in the sea[113] or give a message to a person who simply does not want to believe in it[114]. Parables, symbols or mysteries are told to those who reject raw, true information because it is not compatible with them, is not compatible with what is already inside them. A mind that bases its reasoning on the pillar of lies will not always accept true data.

Life is a code that is executed – a material code, corporeal or immaterial, of the mind. Eternal life is code that executes forever – that code doesn't have to be the same. Eternal life full of madness is when this executing code repeats itself over and over again. When the code is not the same, the activity that executes it is not the same, so the person does something different instead of doing the same thing over and over again and gets to know the unknown.

Knowing the unknown. Since only humans can ask questions, an essential part of human life is getting to know the unknown. The unknown of what was, what is and what will be. Only he can look for answers to the present in the past. Not knowing the future means that when it comes, you react to it with life, this is, among others, the case of children who cannot predict what will happen.

No man would like to live knowing the future. The uncertainty of the coming future is fun, joy and adventure, provided that this future comes to us with good, not evil. When you know what's going to happen, there's no excitement. Wisdom and knowing the future robs you of the unexpected and ruins the joy of discovery. No one would like to live in the future when they "see" that this future will be monotonous, full of sacrifices, full of work with free time reduced to two weeks a year – except for those who got used to it. Many people fear the unknown, but without the coming of the unknown, eternal life for man is certainly not possible.

A person explores, learns and acquires knowledge until the extraordinary becomes normal, until the miracle can be explained because he climbed high and everything else is low. Everyone below him marvels at where he is, except for him. When you are there, nothing is sacred because you know what it really is. The higher you go up there, the less you care about the things that are below you – and they do not move you to life. Once you know the trick, the magic disappears. With age, a person no longer cares about more and more things, they have lost their value in his eyes and he no longer cares about them. The cause loses its power to influence. A person can fall into the trap of wisdom – when he gets caught in it, this wisdom makes nothing matter to him anymore and everything is meaningless. The cause that affects the child does not affect the old man. What you have learned holds you as its prisoner – unlike children who often do before they think, and this

113 Mark 4:3-8 Listen. Look! The sower went out to sow. (...)
114 Mark 2:21-22 Also, no one puts new wine into old wineskins. (...)

doing, acting is part of life. This joy comes from getting to know, not from knowing, joy of walking the path, not from achieving the goal, joy from the journey, not from achieving the "meaning of life" because the excitement comes from discovering something, not from knowing this something – it is as if you were talking to this something and enjoyed previously unknown things that it tells you for the first time; there is no joy when you know that you already know exactly what it will tell you. You strive for something because it is unusual, cool and unknown; you achieve it and it is no longer unusual. When you are human, nothing human is extraordinary; when you are divine, everything what is divine is not extraordinary to you.

It's impossible to know everything. It's impossible to prepare yourself well enough or gather knowledge when you go into the unknown and undiscovered that will surely come – that's why the outcome of all this doesn't depend on man but on Causality that rules over the undiscovered and unknown.

When you don't care about anything, you don't talk to Causality to ask for something from it.

A personal god is sought but never found and that unknown cannot be known.

Pleasure, reward and satisfaction have their value when they are deservedly earned or when they are experienced for the first time. The real pleasure of drinking chocolate milk is when you drink it for the first time. The pleasure of the experience during sex is when you have it for the first time. Water tastes better when you're thirsty, and you enjoy food best when you're actually hungry. When you drink alcohol every day, your satisfaction with it disappears and dissatisfaction appears. When you constantly eat sweets, the sweetness loses its power to cause pleasure. When amusement and games are every day – fun is not entertaining. No matter what pleasures, conveniences and treats you give him, he will not feel any pleasure from them because he has become desensitized to them by having them so often and in abundance. Pleasure, happiness, contentment and fulfillment must be given to you by Causality – you cannot take them yourself. When you have it all the time, Causality makes you desensitized to it – both the pleasure and the pain. When you are happy every day and your desires are met every moment, you are not happy. Constantly enjoying pleasure makes that pleasure lose its power. The food is disgusting, you don't enjoy the luxuries you have. It is Causality that determines when you experience pleasure, happiness, joy, sadness – you cannot force it. You can't take joy on your own – it must be given to you.

True happiness and the fulfillment of desires come when they are given to you, not when you reach for them yourself. Humility before that which fulfills desires will ensure that they are given to you.

Pleasure, reward and satisfaction have their value only when the desire for the things that fulfill them are given by Causality.

When you have enough of it every day – you become desensitized to it, when it is missing and you never see it – you become sensitive to it.

Knowledge about something and the knowing of something is higher than the mind that knows them and the senses that know and examine them because the knowing senses are the cause and the knowledge of the known thing is the effect – therefore there is a reason for the existence of the examining senses, without this cause they would not exist and would not have a reason for existence. What are eyes for if there is no light? Why have ears if there are no sounds? Why teeth if they don't bite food – ancient people had perfect teeth because they used them to the fullest potential for which they were created, while modern man uses soft food, in this way the teeth are already partially relieved. When there are no difficulties, tools to overcome difficulties are not needed.

When you don't see the future, what it will be, and when it finally comes, and it is here and now, you experience it. When you see the future as it is supposed to be, you get to know it before it happens, you "experience it" before it happens. Once you know, you no longer getting to know. So the knowing senses are useless, have no reason to exist.

When you have discovered with your wisdom now, in the present, what the future will be like, you no longer have to discover it with your senses, sight, hearing, smell, and the receptors that make up your living body. You discovered it with your wisdom before it happened, you did not discover it with your senses – you no longer need them.

You act to know – but when you already know, you do not act (live) to find out. Why bother to learn if you already know? He who knows is a prisoner of his knowledge.

When this future, this previously predicted event comes, you cannot fully enjoy it because you have "experienced" it before, there is no emotion, no surprise, no full impact of this event on you because this event has already partially affected you when you predicted it. By using the ability to predict the past, a person ruins the joy of experiencing it in the "here and now" – just like with movie spoilers or an expected surprise party. That's why sometimes knowledge makes you less sensitive and aware because you know what's coming.

Predicting the future destroys the joy of the present. Gaining the knowledge of an approaching unknown future literally robs a person of life. No one can see the front of face of God and live. Gaining knowledge makes innocent discovery impossible. Knowing the front face of Causality makes it impossible to enjoy the future that has finally arrived in the present – and thus makes it impossible to live fully. That is why sometimes it is necessary to have a sacrifice from someone who will bear the burden of knowledge of the future for those who will discover that future and thus enjoy it – a sacrifice of someone who will see the future and guarantee this safe future with a Divine oath so that others can live safely in the "here and now" without thinking about the future. He, who offers himself in this way, cannot derive pleasure from discovering the future – therefore, in advance, he cannot have any desires that would be fulfilled in that future. In order for the carnal man to remain in the body, someone else must carry these immaterial burdens of the mind – because when the carnal man tries to lift them, he destroys his body – therefore a sacrifice is needed who will lift the immaterial so that the material, the carnal people, can exist.

The parent ensures a future for their children so that the child does not have to worry or even think about that future. Causality creates a future that allows for the fullness of life for its creation. In the beginning, the burden of the future was carried by Causality until the first people also desired this wisdom to fulfill their new desire – thus depriving themselves of the pleasure of discovering the unknown, of life. From that moment on, people lived in a future that was someone else's intention. The sacrifice of someone to bear the burden of knowledge about the future is only necessary when that future is bent towards evil, bent by a lie, by someone else's personal desire – then that sacrifice straightens that future back out.

Only what lives in the here and now, lives here and now – receives present impulses. What does not live here and now does not live in the here and now – present signals do not reach him. It's obvious but important. Therefore, animals are always focused on the "here and now" because they cannot predict the future, their senses are heightened to perceive upcoming events and impulses because they cannot predict them.

When for some reason you decide to change the future you see (you don't like it; it's boring) but you fail, you suffer. When you never abandon your will and when you can never fulfill it because it is not in line with God's "will", you suffer forever.

The knowledge about experienced emotions is greater than these emotions: you experience some emotions and you already know them, you have an idea about them, knowledge, the second time you experience this emotion, you will not experience such excitement, so the emotions must be more and more intense to experience the same level of excitement. The excitement comes from unfamiliarity, discovering the unknown in the here and now.

The knowledge about a thing is greater than the thing because the mind is beyond the senses through which it is known – once you know it, then it no longer affects you. You will never look at this thing this way again: the fascination will disappear. This is why, among other things, greater emotions accompany committing evil for the first time than for the tenth time, and the consciousness focuses more attention on the action when it is performed for the first time, routinely – for the hundredth time, and finally subconsciously.

Curiosity has been satisfied by prior knowledge of the thing, not by present contact with it, which may not be the case because the curiosity that was previously satisfied is no longer present.

You and a group of people have heard about some valuable, cool thing. You don't have it but you want to have it. Nobody knows how to do this thing. You set out to find out how it works, what its mechanism is and how to make it. After a while, you know how to build the thing and you know every aspect of it. You build it. Knowing this thing has made this thing no longer have any secrets from you, the excitement of using it is gone, Causality has made you know every end of using this thing. Something that was cool and valuable is no longer so for you. You go back and give the item to the group. The sacrifice that was necessary for this group to obtain this item was paid. You don't get the joy of having the thing, but you give it to others to enjoy. Sometimes a traveled journey makes someone no longer care about the purpose of this journey, sometimes the very path to the goal changes a person and makes him not want that goal.

Fear of death is only when you try to predict the future, a threat to your life (and therefore primarily your desires through the fulfillment of which you want to live) that you fear. Fear of death can both drive to action and refrain from it – then, in fear of death, a person does not live.

You can only feel fear of an upcoming event if you can listen to what Causality is telling you, which is why fear of God pushes you to action.

You don't want to discover the same thing for the hundredth time – you want to discover new things and get to know the unknown.

Getting to know the unknown, the future, is getting to know the front "face" of Causality.

The ability to ask questions makes a person predict the future, when he sees it and he doesn't like it, he can be afraid of it and fall into depression, stress and simply suffer seeing what is inevitably coming. Animals cannot experience this because they live in the "here and now" (therefore animals do not experience evil, pain and stress caused by consciousness that could see the future). For example, a pregnant woman giving birth, whose suffering and stress of what is to come are even multiplied[115]. The human mind goes beyond the "here and now". This ability causes some people to live in the past or future instead of the present and their mind does not respond to the signals that are reaching them now, at this moment. Other Earth organisms immediately respond in the "here and now" to external signals from the environment.

115 Genesis 3:16 To the woman he said: "I will greatly increase the pain of your pragnancy; in pain you will give birth to children (...)"

If a sin committed under the influence of lies and ignorance can be forgiven, then a sin committed under the influence of knowledge of its consequences must be paid for. If the price of this sin was not death and the debtor is still alive after committing this sin, then the sin can be repaid and forgiven. So the more knowledge, the more a person must guard himself, especially when he reaches for the fruit from the tree of *knowledge* of good and evil.

Life is not the highest value because no one wants to live in bad conditions that will not go away[116]. It is better not to live than to live forever in endless suffering. Therefore, immortality should go hand in hand with the pleasure that comes from it.

Living conditions can be divided into good conditions for the body and good conditions for the human spirit. It is necessary to get rid of what makes a person suffer physically and mentally – when these two conditions are corrected, then it will be possible to restore those who have been defeated by these conditions.

The Tree of Life is located in Paradise, therefore eternal life can only be achieved in paradise conditions.

Paradise is a place where desires come true. Nothing true can come from what is false. The true fulfillment of desires and dreams cannot arise from what is untrue – that is why since the first people adopted untrue ideas and teachings, they were expelled from Paradise.

External paradise conditions for the body will not protect against what infects the mind. That is why paradise conditions are so important for the human spirit/mind.

A parent wants his child not to die. But how can he live in unsuitable conditions? So it changes these conditions for the better. If I don't have good conditions for myself, should I create another person? Are children to be born in these conditions or are people to be resurrected? Man does not want to die, but at the same time he does not want to live – in bad conditions.

Everyone needs appropriate living conditions: fish swim in water, birds are built to fly in the sky, humans also need appropriate living conditions: they cannot breathe polluted air, cannot drink poisoned water, the temperature must be appropriate, the diet must be nutritious, the mind cannot be constantly stressed. Since to live, it is only in living conditions. Code of the tree needs appropriate conditions for it. Coral code needs an appropriate environment to execute. Code in an environment that is inappropriate for it will not execute.

A bird that cannot fly, dies;
A fish dies out of water;
Man outside Paradise dies.
The mind of man outside of Paradise dies because from the mind of man desires arise which can be fulfilled in the place where desires are fulfilled.

As long as the water is dirty, there is no point in swimming in it;
As long as the air is polluted, there is no point in flying on it;
As long as the land is contaminated, there is no point in sowing plants on it.
Causality first created the conditions, then the beings that live in them.

More than two thousand years have passed since a man gave the ransom for sin, and yet people are still dying. "If a generation suffers from weaknesses that it knows and admits, and if it is content only to declare that nothing can be done about it, then such a society is doomed to collapse." Two millennia ago people were shown that something could be done about this.

116 Genesis 6:13 After that God said to Noah: "I have decided to put an end to all flesh, because the earth is full of violence on account to them, so I am bringing them to ruin together with the earth."

How to achieve these conditions? Jesus showed the way to them. When good conditions are achieved, a desire to live in them arises in man, without this desire eternal life is impossible.

Society subjects people to conditions that make them unhappy. Then he gives them medicines/means to take away their misfortune. Instead of removing the conditions that make people depressed, society or the system gives them antidepressants, tangible and intangible antidepressants. Nicotine, caffeine, alcohol, pills, activities of the body and mind that allow them to relieve stress, forget and not worry... As a result, these substances modify the human mind, allowing it to tolerate social conditions that it would otherwise not be able to tolerate. It is necessary to get rid of the cause of evil, not to provide means to endure it.

Taking the means that help to survive bad conditions, that suppress dejection, depression and other emotions, makes the person not to manifest those emotions that are right, proper and justifitable, and that make the person take energy from them and be guided by them, and then manifests the effect of those emotions by acting so that the cause of those bad conditions that cause those emotions ceases to exist. Then the person fights the cause of those bad conditions, and is not intoxicated to endure them – and as a result – to constantly live in them and constantly take those means.

People do not want to live in bad conditions and they rebel against the causes that create these bad conditions – political, economical, spiritual, religious causes.

There are places where man does not want to be. There are places where the body of man doesn't want to be. There are "places" where the mind of man doesn't want to be. Eternal life in those places that have these conditions is impossible.

Often can be heard to "settle for what you have" – especially when conditions are difficult and not conducive to further development. "You have to be content with what you have". When a person settles for what they have – it prevents life in its fullness because it prevents further fulfillment of goals and desires. When you settle for what you have and do not follow the path leading to fulfillment of desires – then life in its fullness will not come. When you do not want to just exist, follow the path of life – and do not stand on it at the point of existence.

Can be heard that desires are divided into #1 desires for things essential to life and #2 desires for things that are not essential to life, whims and personal goals. That's not true. #1 are desires for things essential to existence not for life to the fullest. Living life to the fullest is achieved by fulfilling #1 & #2.

The system can lead a person's mind to depression and madness, and whoever loses his mind also loses his body because the body without the spirit is dead.

Causality makes rain to fall and irrigate the vegetation – humans do not have to do this. Causality makes a seed to become a wheat, a fruit, a vegetable – a person does not have to do it. Man is in paradise when he does not stress, does not worry, does not work in the sweat of his face – because Causality works for him and creates for him, and gives him strength, so that man does not have to search for it himself.

There are two possibilities why man does not want to live in bad conditions: #1 Man is unchanging, good, created in the image of God, and then the conditions change to bad, incompatible with this human and man cannot withstand them; #2 The conditions are good, unchangeable, created by God, and then a person changes, so that he does not want to live in these conditions, he does not find in them what he needs, what this new desire that he did not have before requires from him, and then the person labels these conditions as "bad" – according to his private, relative view of these conditions. The latter #2 is true. As a person changes, he changes the environment and the conditions around him to match with what made him change – his new desire. Sometimes he manages to change them, sometimes he doesn't, sometimes they bring bad consequences that he does not want – deplorable, terrible consequences that he did not foresee. Then there is only one solution left – change of the previously changed person, his return to his original state.

Nothing can be changed (without bad consequences; forever) unless it is given by Causality.

Good should not change for evil.

The organism is adapted to the conditions: #1 When it lives in these conditions from a certain moment, when these conditions shape and create it, the conditions are the reason thanks to which the organism adapts and changes to them; #2 When it is created from the beginning to withstand these conditions and live in them.

Dogs, cats, cows and other domesticated animals would have difficulty, if not at all, survive in the conditions in which their ancestors lived. Would most people alive today survive in the conditions in which Adam and Eve lived?

Conditions change the body and mind. If so, should man change these conditions for himself, or should he allow these changing conditions to change him?

There was one purpose that was important to mankind[117] but if humans can't take care of a garden, how will they take care of the entire Earth? And we should start with ourselves. It is Causality that gives the purpose of life: if it does not push you towards it, you will certainly not go there.

> No man can come to me unless the Father, who sent me, draws him, and I will resurrect him on the last day.
>
> John 6:44

God gives purpose to life; you can't become a programmer when computers don't exist, you can't be a pilot when no one had heard of airplanes yet.

A person's aspirations and goals are important only to himself. The purpose of the body code is complete when the body is mature. The code of the body gives purpose to the corporeal being and this organism accomplishes the goals that the body sets for it, including: sexual and physiological goals of growing up. The spirit code gives purpose to a spiritual being.

The meaning of life. Code gives purpose to life – when the code is executed, the goal that the code spoke about is achieved.

When the code of a person's body is complete, another code appears, the code of the spirit. When this code of the mind is executed, another code appears again – and so on. This eternal code is from God who is eternal.

The code of a bear is different, the code of a human body is different, the human mind code is different – so the goals they pursue are different.

---

117 Genesis 2:15 Jehovah God took the man and settled him in the garden of Eden to cultivate it and to take care of it.

Various desires of the body or mind are the meaning of life of the one who has these desires.

Know yourself (your code) – then you will know the purpose, the meaning of your life.

No earthly organism (except man) can execute code forever because it cannot talk to God – when you talk to Causality it gives you an answer – a new code that you execute.

When the code of life is not executed (either the body or mind), the purpose of life is not achieved and life cannot continue because it no longer executes its code.

The first goal of humanity given to them by God ended in failure and has not yet been accomplished – taking care of the place of humanity, for a few people a garden, for many millions for the planet. If this goal ends in success, it will pave the way for other goals that cannot be achieved without fulfilling the first one[118].

In the beginning, God created Heaven and Earth. The Earth was home to humans. God created a garden of paradise for them. Later, God expelled people from paradise. The outer area beyond Paradise was not fully suitable for the human race, even today – there is no means of subsistence outside. Only that garden fully met the highest requirements for a man, not the area beyond. No wonder there is not enough of everything for everyone to be fully satisfied. Since the area outside the Garden of Eden was excluded from the act of creation that would provide decent living conditions on a par with Eden, then the people who want to live in it must themselves create conditions worthy of life there – conditions in which it is possible to fulfill the desires that make one want to live.

First there are conditions for life, then there is life – first a system for man is created, only later does man appear. Man cannot come into being first and only then conditions or a system for this man's life – if this is the case, this man will suffer. The conditions, the system for man, who did not willfully reach for the knowledge of good and evil, were created for millions of years – when this system finally came into being, it was suitable for him. But the system (the right system in which people could fulfill their desires and live forever, as in the first one) for people who reached for the knowledge of good and evil – for people with this ability who appeared suddenly – was not created. The place where the first humans were created satisfied their desires for the eyes, ears, stomach, and body – but it could not satisfy the newly opened eyes of the mind – with the appearance of this organ came the desires of this organ, desires that could not be satisfied in this place – and when desires cannot be satisfied, one cannot live – thus humans drifted away from the tree of life.

Should all the means of life in its fullness be guaranteed before a person is born? These means do not necessarily have to exist before that person, but the very possibilities of achieving these means must exist before that person. The objects of desire do not necessarily have to exist before the conception of offspring who will have these desires, but there must be an unobstructed path to achieving these desires. A thousand years ago, there was no technology that would allow to enjoy life in the way we do today, and yet many people were not bothered by what they did not see, and therefore – what they did not desire – especially in the times of Adam and Eve. Life in its fullness is possible not necessarily when these means of life are fully guaranteed at this moment, but when the path leading to these means, to the fulfillment of dreams and desires, is open and certain.

It's not that there are no means for subsistence, no means to satisfy desires – it's that these desires have become more numerous than the means currently available, than the means to satisfy them. Sometimes people simply commit suicide when they can't fulfill their desires and aspirations.

---

118 Luke 17:7-10 (...) 'Get something ready for me to have my evening meal, and put on an apron and serve me until I finish eating and drinking, and afterward you can eat and drink' (...)

Currently there are no means of subsistence outside as there were in Eden, but all livelihoods have become someone's property – few people will give them to you for free. This is a monetary system of exchanging goods in a global society in which there is the concept of private property – and this property may vary – from small things to large tracts of land and raw material deposits to human property. Private property is a construct (because it can be stolen or destroyed) – "you got it for free" but you don't give it for free. There are people who do not take the environment into account in their calculations because it is "not profitable" from a business point of view.

Private property is a construct – you have what you can control, you don't have what you can't control, whether things or people. You only have ownership to the extent you have control over it – so putting things in a book or just saying, "It's mine!" won't automatically make it yours. Something is someone's property if that someone is in control of it and governs it. Private property is a construct – you may or may not believe in this construct. If you want to believe in it and have private property, you must obey the law of private property: "Thou shall not steal." If you can control something/someone, then it is your property – that is why Satan is said to be the ruler of the world.

What makes something “yours”? That it is your property? It is control over it.

You have private property if something is yours. Something is yours only if you have control over it. You have control over it only if you are aware of it. You are aware of it when you feel it or see it through your mind's eyes, or you can take it and touch it and use it. You can feel it and see it only when you have healthy eyes and the field of vision is not covered by obstacles and lies that obscure the truth. The more receivers you have, the more eyes you have the more you can see – you feel, you receive signals, information, impulses, sensations, emotions, data... – and then you feel them and see them, and then you are aware of them, and then you react to them, and then you control them, and then they are yours.

If you want someone to lose control over something – divert their awareness from it and make them not aware of it at all.

A person does not have to control every aspect of his life to live because most of his life is controlled by Causality – then a person is at peace and does not have to stress or worry about his life.

When you have power over everything, you don't know the unknown; Control over everything prevents the unknown from coming. Only Causality governs and controls everything. Even Jesus didn't know everything[119].

A small child does not have the same control over himself as an adult has over himself. The parent has some control over his child. The government has some control over this child. Causality controls the body's processes and thought process of this child. Is the child someone's property? Whose? A fetus, a child, an adult – a person is the property of the one who controls him, to the extent that he controls him. If no one can control you, then you belong to yourself.

Is copying an original theft of the original? No. Can copying something cause to lose its value? Yes. By copying money, you make someone else's hard-earned money lose value.

Is a large amount of money, that a person has, his private property? After all, for it to have value, other people must also consider it valuable. You can't force someone to believe that something has value.

119 Matthew 24:36 Concerning that day and hour nobody knows, neither the angels of the heaven nor the Son, but only the Father.

By giving someone else power over something you can't handle, you gain peace of mind. This creates a ruler who controls what no one else could.

The Earth was given to humanity as its own. Today, humans control even the weather.

I. You are what you control. God is what it controls, what is subject to Causality. The fetus has nothing under its control. Jesus submitted to God's control, God worked through Jesus who did nothing of his own will (that is why, among other things, he said "Son of Man..." instead of "I"). A person can say about himself “I” only when he has control over himself.

You are where your consciousness is. When you are misled and you are in a lie, then you are heading towards nothingness and death, because a lie and untruth is nothingness. The consciousness of people has been torn off from what really exists, from Causality – and therefore from the real world that it governs, thereby detaching people from this real world.

Jesus spoke about himself in the third person because it was God who performed his actions through him, rather than Jesus doing them on his own.

Man does not exalt himself and maintains his humility when he knows that most things happen through him and not by him – he maintains his humility before Causality which works through him – then the "I" of man does not puff itself up with exalting pride. When the "I" of man does not maintain humility before God and exalts himself, then Causality humiliates the "I" of man.

The "I" of man exists only when man is the cause of his actions, effects. The "I" of man does not exist when he is not the cause of his actions – when actions are performed through this man and not directly by this man – then this man has no control over those actions that are performed indirectly through him – then that, which governs this man, has control over the actions of this man. Jesus left us so that we would finally gain control over ourselves, and thus – so that we would begin to exist.

The appearance of one's own desire in a person creates the "I".

Causality gives you power over yourself and you acquire yourself as your own; a personal god enslaves and does not let go. Causality is the source of man's power over himself – over his own body and mind.

The more things are subject to your will and the more you control, the less Causality controls it.

If currently living people cannot have private property, then there cannot be a resurrection of others who would also like to have private property.

Adam was naked and had nothing, yet he was the Son of God and the whole Earth was his.

Some people don't even own their mind.

Do you have to pay for something that is already yours? In many countries, even if you own it, you have to pay for it.

The system allows you to own private property, but it cannot eliminate people's worries about the future of this property.

The cost of living slowly begins to exceed mere money and costs worry[120] and mental anguish. Instead of paradise of the mind, the hell of the mind – this is the very reason why a person does not want to live and refuses to continue existing in such bad conditions.

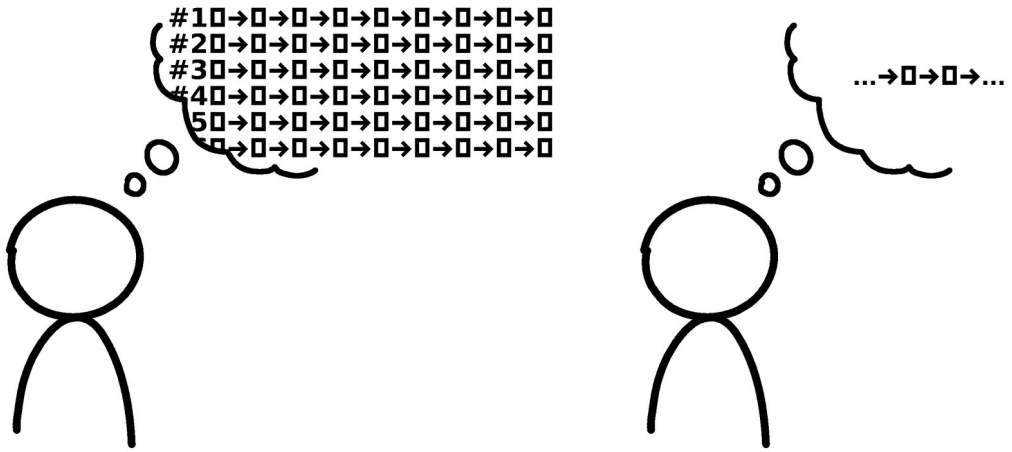
If a person does not want to live in certain conditions (and does not have faith in their improvement), he refuses to live in them so as not to suffer any more.

But it would be unreasonable to think that even a paradise environment will make a person live forever, disobedience to God causes that a person does not live forever – from plucking from the tree of knowledge which he was told not to do.

If in the paradise of Eden people had everything needed for their bodies, it is unreasonable to think that modern science, technology and medicine will contribute to the fact that man will live forever. The average person today has access to things that once only kings could afford, things whose power was attributed to gods. People create things to make life easier but often forget to destroy things that lead to death. In addition to the heavenly conditions in man's surroundings, the heavenly conditions must first and foremost be within man – people are beginning to realize that the reason that makes them feel as if their mind is sick is that they live in a system that was not designed for the human spirit.

Any kind of possessions, luxury or other materialistic things cannot lead to ethernal life or Paradise – Adam and Eve were naked and had nothing and yet they would have lived forever in Paradise. Only through heavenly stress-free peace of mind can one achieve eternal life – paradise conditions in the mind. The first humans were naked and had nothing and yet they did not stress out through shame; Jesus said not to worry; the one hanging next to Jesus was told that he would be in Paradise because he would not worry about things that disturb the peace of mind. To be in Paradise where you can achieve eternal life, sins that cause stress and take away your peace of mind must be forgiven – that's why Jesus let go of sins and offenses against himself.

You don't have to constantly stress out and worry about the future, calculating, figuring out and memorizing what to do after each successive event if you are guided throughout the present time by Causality which will guide you through them all.



This makes a person to become stressed (which causes bad conditions in the mind) – he worries about the future (especially about the future of his desires), he prepares himself for every possible circumstance that he doesn't know – even for the one that will never come. When a person has no desires then he does not become stressed because he does not worry about anything.

120 Matthew 6:25-34 (...) Stop being anxious about your lives as to what you will eat or what you will drink, or about your bodies as to what you will wear (...)

This makes a person stressed and anxious about the future, calculating, figuring out and memorizing what to do after each successive event: his desire that he is striving for, his own intention that is in the future.

Man worries only when his desires, aspirations and goals are threatened. A man without any desires never worries – when you do not want anything you do not worry about losing it. Man worries about his future (the future of what he desires) in a world when this world does not belong to God (the one who fulfills desires). World does not belong to God when does not obey his commandments – laws by which desires can be fulfilled.

The first people did not worry about the future – they left it in the hands of Causality. They let the unknown to God. Excessive thinking about the unknown future destroys the body and mind – Causality can withstand infinity because God is eternal.

How far into the future should a person calculate this future in order to survive? Therefore, a person must listen to Causality now so that the future later will come, he must obey its commandments in the present moment so that a good future will come. A person does not have to worry about the future if in the present moment he listens to Causality which will take care of this future – because from listening to Causality now a good future will come later.

Only what is immaterial can provide man with eternal life, because what is immaterial has deprived man of eternal life. Immaterial, paradise conditions of the mind.

The misfortune and bad conditions surrounding you prevent you from fully enjoying goodness and happiness for yourself. How can a man be happy when there is so much evil, pain and bad things around him?

It's madness that you should have to fight for peace of mind.

When you live in constant rush, stress, worry, constant striving for paradise conditions for your body, you lose the paradise conditions of your spirit. You can often hear that the rich are unhappy, while the boozer from uder the liquor store lives carefree and laughs about tomorrow. Paradise conditions for the body do not create paradise conditions for the mind. Peace of mind is impossible to achieve for a person who is in the system – it requires him to constantly fight for the existence of the desires he fights for and the things he cares about.

A quick pursuit of something (often forced by others) takes away the paradise conditions for the mind. Rushing for time – "Faster!" If you want to live forever, you will have enough time for everything because eternity is infinite. Under the limiting time pressure imposed by others, a person seems slow and sluggish, but everyone performs activities at their own pace.

Working won't put your mind in paradise. The result of your work may make it happen – but when you work for money, the work is never end.

You work to have the result of that work. When the thing you work for, a decent life, a home, a child, cannot be achieved through this work, you leave your work. What is the reason for making such effort if you cannot achieve it[121]?

121 Ecclesiastes 4:6 Better is a handful of rest than two handfuls of hard work and hasing after the wind.

Computer calculations cost electrical power. Similarly, human thinking – by tormenting yourself with constant worry, you lose your strength. If thinking about something is finished and if there is no new information to think about, then thinking is finished – there is no need to torment yourself with it anymore to spoil the paradise conditions in the mind. When you're done thinking about something, you act. You can't think about something forever. When the data to be analyzed is of finite value, analyzing it should come to an end. When the data to be analyzed is incorrect, contaminated, contains an error or falsehood, and you do not know it and trust that it is true, then when analyzing it you will not reach the true result and you will search for it forever – until someone brings the truth and until you do not take it into the equation.

Excessive thinking literally destroys the body.

When you sin, you destroy the good conditions within yourself.

When there are conditions for life, there is life. When there are conditions for friendship to exist, friendship exists. When there are conditions for love to exist, love exists[122]. If there are no conditions for this, all this does not exist. When the condition that is the cause exists, then the effect will also exist.

For a person to live forever, it is only in good conditions. In good, paradise conditions for the body and good, paradise conditions for the human spirit. In paradise for body and mind. Man can only live forever in them, which is why in Paradise is the Tree of Life. Neither a person's body nor his mind will tolerate bad conditions forever, therefore no one lives forever because no one wants to live forever – in these conditions, both those outside the person and those inside him. The one who dies does not have heavenly, good conditions. If a body dies, there are no good conditions for it. If the spirit, the mind (any desire for something, desire or will that cannot be fulfilled by bad conditions) dies, then there are no good conditions for it.

Adam and Eve were in Paradise when they were ignorant of the wisdom of knowing good and bad.

When the first humans were in Eden, they didn't worry about anything they shouldn't worry about. Causality is eternal, infinite. Man wants to live forever, but it is impossible to predict eternity in advance, so as to even worry about it. In paradise there is peace for the body and, above all, for the mind.

You are in a good state of mind when you don't worry. You live in a mental paradise when you don't worry about the future.

The true paradise for the mind is when there are no prophecies foretelling war, famine, death or anything bad, when there is no bad future for man to see to worry about. The sight of coming evil creates bad conditions for the mind. When evil is not seen coming (regardless of whether it actually comes or not), there are no bad conditions for the human spirit. On the other hand, it is caring and worrying about the future that gives us strength, power and mental preparation to deal with the future.

> People will become faint out of fear and expectation of the things coming upon the inhabited earth, for the powers of the heavens will be shaken.

Luke 21:26 "apprehensive of what is coming on the world" – NIV
"for looking after those things which are coming on the earth" – KJV

Sometimes some people are overcome by the mere sight of evil coming – regardless of whether they were right or wrong that this evil is coming. In such a situation, it proves that there is nothing to be afraid of except fear itself.

122 Matthew 24:12 and because of the increasing of lawlessness, the love of the greater number will grow cold

People do not want to see a bad future that they cannot prevent and their eyes become clouded – in order to maintain good conditions of the mind – so it is a defense system of those who are not in a strong bond with Causality that gives strength to boldly look into the bad future to face it and defeat it.

The truly paradisiac conditions for the mind are when you feel zero shame about who you are because then you don't care what others think of you, and this in turn causes you to limit yourself and your life and actions become limited – to be in a free paradise, not in a prison bound by restrictions.

Look at little children: their movements are free, their thoughts are unrestrained, they express themselves without fear, they do not have the mental blocks that adults have – of such is the kingdom of heaven, and they are in it now. A child who doesn't worry about anything has the best mental conditions.

The system does not allow us not to worry about human existence itself, because existence itself costs money, and the money comes from the system and not from nature conquered by the system.

If I was born for free and not of my own will, then the means of life should also be free – their production should not be hindered by the greed of money.

Good living conditions for humans are not unshakably guaranteed by human rights because good living conditions must have a cause, they cannot magically appear out of thin air. If these good conditions do not exist, someone has to create them.

When there are no conditions for the material body, the body perishes because it does not want to live in such conditions. When there are no conditions for the immaterial human spirit/mind, the mind dies because it does not want to live in such conditions. This environment, these conditions (material or immaterial) can be both inside and outside a person.

If we do not create the conditions for life, for resurrection, there will be no resurrection. If we create the conditions for resurrection, there will be resurrection. After a random uneducated person from the future would be resurrected, would he immediately work in a factory just to survive? Would he like to be resurrected back to his life as a slave? Adam and Eve were not educated, trained in a profession, did not have special skills, yet they lived in appropriate, paradise conditions – for people like them who died, good conditions should also be created for them to be resurrected. Even the first people cultivated and cared for the garden – the place of their good conditions, which did not make them unskilled.

Therefore, the goal is not: "How can we save current humanity?" but: "How can we create conditions in which the present living and the resurrected ones could live?"

Death. If we consider what life is, it is also worth mentioning what death is, and specifically asking one important question: Is death just?

Was Adam's judgment unjust? Was the *consequence* of Adam's act unjust? God, Causality, is a just judge who rewards good, punishes evil, gives consequences for the action, kills for disobedience to it, and gives life or even resurrects for obeying it. We have the right to life. Even more so do we have the right to die.

> (...) The soul who sins is the one who will die.

Ezekiel 18:4, see also Deuteronomy 30:15-20

Death can be good. It would be better if you did not acquire evil in yourself and then you had to kill it in yourself – it is the death of a part of you, because evil has become a part of you.

A dignified death and a dignified burial are a relative construct that one may recognize or not.

Either there is a cause that makes man die, or there is a cause that makes man unable to live forever. Either something was given to man, something that made him die, or something was taken from man, something that made him live forever. What did Jesus have (or not have) (and what was the reason he had it?) (...and why didn't Adam have it?) that allowed him not to fall like Adam?

There is no cause of death – there is only a cause of the absence of life – because death is not something, death is the absence of something. Everyone dies – so everyone is affected by the cause that ~~brings death~~ takes life – whatever that cause may be. What should be done so that this cause does not affect a person?

When you get rid of certain values and rebel against them, these values have no effect on you. You die when you rebel against the values that make you live. You die when you accept and profess values that make you die. When you reject what is immaterial (ideas, teachings, the word of God), you become only matter, flesh, dust – just like animals that perish[123].

Man dies because he does not want to be guided by the Causality that makes man live. The Word of Causality is truth, something existing. When you reject the truth and accept falsehood and lies – something that does not exist – then you are heading to the land of non-existence, to death. Accepting a lie causes the truth that gives life to the body to die in a person.

The direct cause of man's death is separation from the source of life – Causality. The direct cause of why a person dies is not listening to Causality, then the cause that affects you does not make you to react to that cause, doesn't provide effect. Then the chain of causality is broken.

Sin – acting against Causality – makes us to miss the goal of eternity that Causality gives. When you sin, you leave the path that leads to goal.

Man dies when he sins by not walking on God's way of life. He walks on it when he listens to Causality. When he listens to God, man walks his actions along that path where Causality directs him.

123 Ecclesiastes 3:18-21 (...) for there is an outcome for humans and an outcome for animals; they all have the same outcome. As the one dies, so the other dies; and they all have but one spirit. So man has no superiority over animals, for everything is futile.

When a person's body dies, does the soul (mind) separate from the body? When a person dies, the body is separated from the word of God, from the truth; the body separates itself from the ideas, teachings, beliefs that it believes to be correct – then the body becomes just a body without the ideas it rejected, just as Adam and Eve rejected the commandment of Causality and became only a material body without the immaterial life-giving code. The body itself returns to dust. There are people who are dead while alive precisely because they have abandoned these things[124].

A corporeal entity executes the code found in its body. The spiritual entity executes the code found in its mind. As long as a person executes the code that is in his mind, he is more than just a body. Adam and Eve (at least up to a certain point) followed the code that was in their minds – the code from God, one commandment.

If a man dies it means that he is not in the image of the immortal God.

People also die of their own will, of their own stupidity, of unforeseen circumstances. Natural selection does not only exist in the animal world.

What sacrifice is needed to redeem from death? Job's unimaginable suffering was not enough to keep him from dying. So the sacrifice is not what is material in man but what is immaterial.

One living is worth more than all the dead that ever were. There is something wrong with it when, after a person dies, the living pay more attention to him than when he was alive, or when the state spends more on the dead than on the living. People lament for their loved ones when they die and want them to still be alive, and yet they do nothing to make their lives easier while they still exist or to create conditions for them to live – forever. What's worse, they make these conditions worse and create bad conditions for the body, as well as for the spirit – just look at the world: isn't what you see the work of people? Isn't that why they die because of these created conditions for ~~life~~ death?

The most common causes of death:

- cardiovascular diseases
- cancer and other neoplasms
- stroke and cerebrovascular diseases
- diabetes
- respiratory diseases
- diarrhea
- AIDS
- malaria
- wars
- suicides

The causes of the causes of death:

- diabetes and vascular disease are often the result of an unhealthy diet rich in sugar and fats, poor physical activity or simply obesity;
- respiratory diseases are most often caused by cigarette smoking[125], harmful dust and air pollution;
- diarrhea, AIDS and malaria are common in Africa due to poor sanitation and hygiene;
- chronic cirrhosis and other liver diseases are mainly caused by alcohol abuse.

124 Luke 11:44 Woe to you, because you are as those gravesthat are not clearly visible, that men walk on and do not know it!

125 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cigarette https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tobacco_smoke
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_additives_in_cigarettes https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Health_effects_of_tobacco

... and their causes:

- Unhealthy diet – the human body is made of what it eats; carbonated drinks, sweets, alcohol, practically everything in large quantities has poisonous properties, from plain water, through cigars, to radiation; man's spirit is built by what he "eats": false teachings and beliefs are unhealthy for the human mind; false doctrines bear no fruit at all, and man goes hungry; you are made of what you eat, if you fill your body with garbage, your body will be garbage, if you fill your mind with garbage, it only belongs in the trash. The body is destroyed by things that destroy it and not by things that do not properly build it – these are two different things.
- drugs – especially the "heavy" ones, have no nutritional value and damage the body;
- wars – the causes of battles are always about things that are desired and cannot be satisfied by peaceful means – when you get something peacefully, you get it from God;
- suicide – no person will take his own life if he derives pleasure from it, so the causes of such death may be: poor physical, mental and emotional conditions, the inability to fulfill one's will when it comes to love, career, dreams or anything else – everything that makes you not want to live; Moreover, the act of suicide can last for years: drinking, gorging, smoking, worrying... to death;
- choice (which also has its own cause). Not only your choice, but also the choice of people from the other side of the world, because their choice affects the quality of the place where you stand, because their choice cannot go beyond the closed ecosystem, but only spread throughout it. The cause from which choice arises is desire.

And that's it – to eliminate the root cause of all these causes.

If the disease attacks the mind, it will also spread to the body.
If the attack occurs on the body, the damage will not reach the mind[126].

When you poison the body, the body becomes sick; when you poison the mind, the mind becomes sick. When you act against your own body, the body becomes sick; when you act against your own spirit, your spirit, your mind, becomes sick – and the death of the mind brings with it the death of the body.

Man sins when he does not follow the path of Causality. Causality rules the material body of man – when man sins against the laws of the body, established by Causality, then he does evil to his own body (diseases of the body, imperfections); Causality rules the immaterial mind of man – when man sins against the principles, established by Causality, which govern his own mind, then he does evil to his own mind (diseases of the mind, immersion in the darkness of lies, missing the goal of desires).

Causality is the best doctor – anyone who listens to it will be healed. How can you contact this healer? Through prayer. Silence yourself to better perceive what Causality is telling you. A conversation about resolving larger problems can take days, can be costly, and may even be unpopular to one who has his own perspectives and desires.

The healing medicine is bitter to the one who is sick.

In pursuit of his desires, that are against the will of Causality, man becomes sick and dies.

No human illness, whether physical or mental, is a cause that makes a person to commit evil.

Your transgressions against your own body must be repaid;

126 Matthew 10:28 And do not become fearful of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; rather, fear him who can destroy both soul and body in Gehen.

Your transgressions against your own mind must be repaid;
Repaid by you or by someone else – because Causality will not leave the cause without effect.

Cancer can't be cured because cancer is still not understood. Death can't be defeated because life is still not yet understood.

If a person's body is sick, food feeds the disease. If a person's mind is sick, fulfilling the mind's desires feeds the sickness of the mind – just as fulfilling the desires of the body feeds the sickness of the body. Starve the sickness and don't feed it.

Health is a state of the body (or mind) in which the body executes its code correctly without interference. Sickness is a state of the body (or mind) in which the code of the body does not execute fully correctly – whether through another foreign code that has entered the body, or through a substance, or other factors or actions that have befallen the body.

Fever is a battle between the body and the cause of the fever – this battle must occur for the body to win and emerge healthy. Suppressing the fever does not help get rid of the disease and therefore the cause of that disease.

It is often the case that the will of the human mind alone decides what is good for the body, even in the face of completely different signals from the body that reach the mind – when the mind decides not to sleep anymore, although the body needs sleep and rest, when the will decides to eat, although the body does not yet need it. Then the desires of the mind decide about the body, although the body has no such need.

When everything in a person is healthy, in the best possible condition, except the mind, the person dies because a person is not only a body but above all a mind – this was the case with the first people. Sometimes, to heal the body, you must first heal the mind.

What causes mental illness?

- Lies and falsehoods that guide man. An untrue lie cannot build what is true. Nothing that is false gives power;
- Burdens that the human mind cannot bear. Sometimes these burdens are thrown on a person from outside, sometimes he puts them on himself. Anticipating the incoming evil that weighs heavily on a person's mind.
- Inability to fulfill desires;
- A sin, transgression against someone/something that has the power to fulfill a person's desires, against something that leads to the goal of fulfilling a desire. And then this desire is not fulfilled, and the person's mind goes bad.

Mental illnesses are not caused by the mind running away from evil or from burdens that a person cannot bear.

The more aware you are, the greater the likelihood of mental illness. It's like with a body: the more body you have, the more body the disease of the body can take, the more of what is in the mind, the more of the mind the disease of the mind can take (and the more mental food for disease). Cannot have mental illness, the one, who has no mind.

What fixes the mind?

- Removing lies from the mind and eliminate untruths that harm the human mind. Directing the mind back to the path of truth and logic, the source of which is Causality – Causality heals the human mind because it shows him the truth, thus destroying what caused the disease: falsehood and lies;
- Causality is the source of strength. When you draw power from this source, you will have the strength to bear anything; When you are weak, draw strength from the source of strength;
- Escape from the pathogenic factor of the mind. Leaving to Causality and others who serve it, to deal with the evil that causes harm to the body and mind of others – transferring the burden of the mind from the person who is unable to bear it, to the mind of the person who is able to bear it (just as a parent carries burdens that his child cannot lift) – then the burden does not crush the weak person;
- Forgiveness of man's sins makes him able to fulfill his desires again. A man can forgive another man's sins.

The mental health of the mind is more important than the health of the body because a person is first and foremost a mind.

If the problem lies in the mind, no amount of healing the body will help.

Causality is the source of power of the mind and listening to it guarantees good mental health.

You cannot die from old age alone. The reason why elderly people look old is not "old age" – as they say – but everything that causes the body to deteriorate: alcohol abuse, cigarettes, stimulants and other things that are incompatible with the code according to which the body was created; and everything that causes the (conscious or unconscious) destruction of the mind: its saturation with lies and, above all, stress. The mere number of laps around the sun does not cause the body to deteriorate. If something is destroyed or something dies, there are reasons for this and reasons for these causes. Death from "oldness" does not exist. Death occurs through the destruction of body or mind – but the cause of their destruction is not "old age".

What does it mean to be "old"? Does it mean to have a damaged body, to be visually impaired, to have hearing impairment, to move more slowly? Does it mean to have a damaged mind, to not be able to think logically, to have mental illnesses, to have insecurity, to see no prospects for future? But all this happens to minors.

Old age is a state of being (person, body, spirit) in which this being is in the last stages of executing its code, after which this code is no longer executed and this code comes to its end and after this code, in this being, no other code appears for this being to execute.

The awareness of one's last stages of the execution of one's code, the awareness of one's last actions and activities – brings with it the awareness of death, the sight of the approaching end. The chains that bind the mind of man make it so that man is not free and prevent him from acting and doing. The awareness of the continuity of the code, the awareness of the lack of interruption in action – is the awareness of eternal life.

Man destroys himself and then blames "old age" for the state of his body and mind.

Some things can be described as "old". A fossil can be described as old or young – so the meaning of old age can be a construct that can be understood in many ways.

A person sees and feels these bad, deadly conditions in which he does not want to live and the evil that is coming and says: "I will die anyway, I do not want to live in these conditions which I cannot change." And he kills himself: he smokes, drinks, destroys and uses his body and his mind – he does to himself what he was afraid of and what he was running away from. "I can't change it anyway, so I'll enjoy and use life until my usage of life will make me die". Faith in change has been lost. "There is nothing left for us to do". They deliberately go to death because they cannot live life to the fullest. In such a case, the effect (death by slow suicide) comes before its specific, external cause (bad conditions, lack of faith in change, evil that is coming).

Many people destroy themselves and then expect compassion from others.

Doctors don't pity the sick when they know that the sick choose their illness. Sick people are simply running away from doctors – because to recover, they must abandon their harmful desires – desires they refuse to let go of. They want the means to recover, to return to fulfilling the destructive desires that led them to their state of devastation in the first place.

Why act and execute code if you know you will die? But it is the execution of code and action that makes you live. And when a person decides to execute this code, which is from Causality, and when he executes it, then the next code appears in him. Eternally.

Why are you worried that people are dying when more people have died so far than in this generation? Why warn about a deadly impending danger that will soon annihilate everyone when so far more have died than this danger will kill? If a meteor fell on the planet and annihilated all life on Earth, one generation of people (7% of people who have ever lived) would die. But for centuries and up to now, dozens of generations of human beings have been lost. What does one death mean against so many? The tragedy continues. If all the people die now, it will be nothing compared to how many have died so far. “But what about the people who might be born?” – don't regret what will never be created because it doesn't exist.

Members of the Kingdom of God have the goal of creating conditions for the resurrection of the dead, and the worst that can happen to the current living is exactly death.

For hundreds of years, the death of millions proves that the systems in which they live cannot lead them to eternal life.

Why not kill yourself and do not suffer in this system until it's all over and resurrection under better conditions comes? People don't understand those who leave of their own will. They do not understand with their mind because their mind has not gone where their mind goes. Adam didn't kill himself when he was feeling bad, Job didn't commit suicide, Jesus endured evil – bad conditions and factors are supposed to make you react to them, not give in to them and give up – but you bear the burden when you have the strength, when you don't have power, the weight crushes you. The strength to live and overcome the difficulties that make it possible must come from the source that gives life.

“Their mind has not wandered where minds of those people are” – if a person does not accept the truths, his mind will never go there.

A person commits suicide when he is finally convinced (rightly or wrongly) that he can never fulfill his desires. The desires and strivings by which he wants to live.

When a person sees that the path to fulfilling their desires is unobstructed, their morale rises and they boldly press forward, for the path, however long, leading to their goal is open and unimpeded. When a person sees that the path to their desires is blocked so that they cannot cross this obstacle, their morale drops and their spirits sink.

A person who walks the path and achieves the fulfillment of their desires gives faith to those who have lost faith in achieving their goal along this path. They see that he have succeeded – so they too want to walk this path, to find at its end the fulfillment of their desires, aspirations, and dreams.

It is madness to force yourself to live in bad conditions with no prospect of improving them.

Sensitive young people feel these bad conditions and do not want to live in them; the old, desensitized, live in these conditions, desensitizing themselves in order to withstand them.

They leave to wait out these bad conditions until they pass.

> Enter into the rock and hide yourself in the dust because of the terrifying presence of Jehovah and his majestic splendor.

Isaiah 2:10

> Go, my people, enter your inner rooms, and shut your doors behind you.
> Hide yourself for a brief moment until the wrath has passed by.

Isaiah 26:20

This is a world of a system in which one does not want to live, so it is no wonder that people do not want to live in it and die.

"I would rather die than commit evil!" – that's what Jesus actually did.

"Don't force me to live in this evil system."

"I don't want to die, but I also don't want to live – in this system, in these conditions."

"Either live life abundantly or not live at all."

> (...) whoever hates his life in this world will safeguard it for everlasting life.

John 12:25

He, who commits suicide, is not guilty of sin – he who forces someone to live in bad conditions in which they do not want to live is guilty of evil. Suicide is not a sin against a personal god because he does not exist.

He is not guilty of evil who persuades another to take respite from bad conditions; he is guilty of evil who persuades another to continue living in bad conditions.

When a person sees (or thinks) that the path leading to the fulfillment of his desires is blocked, then there is no point in living if there is no possibility of fulfilling his dreams and desires – the meaning of life is unattainable, so life ends. What gives prospects for the future is the awareness that dreams and desires will come true – this unshakable guarantee must come from Causality.

People prepare for death instead of changing their environment to conditions suitable for eternal life. They work for years, saving pension contributions, writing testaments, and buying places in the cemetery. Those who are preparing to die have no say in the affairs of the living.

When the unborn child in the mother's womb is incurably ill, deformed, so that it will die immediately after birth, or will live in suffering, killing it means killing the body – not killing the spirit because the fetus has no mind. Death can be a good thing – God has often killed, for example, the people of Sodom. It is better to die than to live in suffering. "Do not kill" means: do not kill a person (because all other forms of life, lower than humans, are not persons, they die and are not resurrected) because you are not the judge of another person – but a person (and not a body) is born only at conception:

> (...) *blow into his nostrils the breath of life*, and the man became a living person.
>
> Genesis 2:7 "living being" – NIV "living soul" – KJV

If an organism has a human code, then that organism is a human, regardless of whether it is still in the mother's womb (and therefore does not have a mind with consciousness) or not. Causality makes natural selection that already exists in the world of flora and fauna – does anyone do an abortion for wild animals when their fetus is dead inside them?

In addition to the death of the body, there is the death of the spirit in man.
Very often you can notice something that makes adults behave like dead people while they are still alive: it is the death of the pure, good, full of innocence and ideal truth of children's goodness – no one can take it away from you, you can only give it back. When the good in them has died a long time ago, nothing moves them anymore and they don't react. Therefore, unlike most adults, children react. Dead doesn't react; The living are also restrained from action when they see that the fruit of their action will certainly be destroyed in the environment/system/conditions in which they are; building where the it will be destroyed is pointless.

> Jesus said to him: "Keep following me, and let the dead bury their dead".
>
> Matthew 8:22, Luke 9:60

When, knowing the truth, under pressure, you abandon it and agree to a lie – this is the death of the truth in you, it can only happen with your consent, no one can force you to do it.

Many adults are so saturated with lies that they have difficulty accepting the truth – the word of God. The reason why people do not look for the truth, do not want to look at it, lie to themselves is the protection of their desires – fear of what is dear to you because it was built on untruth (on something that does not exist and exists only in a person's mind). A small child who has no desires does not have to lie to himself to protect goals and desires that he does not have. In this case, it is true that children are stronger than them because they are closer to the truth that is not clouded by their desires, because the child does not lie to himself, he boldly talks to Causality, asking it questions every day. In this way, the adult gives up the strength he had as a child for his desires. A lie separates from what Causality says, from true reality – then a man full of untruth is unable to bear it. It is not worth seeking the truth from someone who is running away from it.

When the goodness in a person has died a long time ago, "nothing moves him anymore" because the goodness in a person can no longer respond to external signals because it is no longer there. Just as a person without ears cannot respond to sound or a person without eyes cannot respond to light signals. What has died within man cannot be moved from the outside, because it is no longer there. The angel does not respond to the signals sent by his body because he does not have it. Plants and animals do not respond to the immaterial signals to which humans respond.

If by killing an unborn child one kills the body itself because the fetus has no mind, then by killing an adult man without a mind one also kills the body itself (because this man without a mind is only a body, only dust). A man is without a mind when he rejects all the things that build the mind, just as Adam and Eve rejected the truths given to them by God that build their minds.

If God is the source of life and you die, then God is not with you (as he was with Adam or Jesus), since life is an uninterrupted sequence of events and yours is interrupted.

The Bible says that death is the result of sin against God. Sin literally means "missing the target." In the case of the first humans, they missed the goal of eternal life, so the consequence of their action was death. Some people wonder where is man's sin, whether:

- is it carried through the body, is it in the genes, as a flaw in the body?

> As offspring of sinner Adam, we were born in sin. From birth on, the inclination of our heart is toward badness.
>
> *Reasoning From the Scriptures, sin*

- is transferred from person to person thanks to the ideas and teachings that are believed (and these, in turn, influence our lives and actions because it is the mind, soaked in these teachings, that controls the body, and the body – the nearest surroundings, and ultimately the world)?

The answer is: nowhere. Sin is a one-time act that has consequences that affect the mind, body and the world around us. It is the consequence of that act that is passed down until it is corrected. Sin is not passed on, the consequence of sin is passed on: consequence in the body (contaminated DNA code passed down through the generations), consequence in the mind (the teachings, beliefs passed down through the generations).

Death is the cessation of the execution of the code of a coded being.

Jesus mentioned being born again:

> (...) Most truly I say to you, unless anyone is born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.
>
> John 3:3

To be born again you must first die – your bad habits, ideas, tendencies, way of thinking based on lies must die because in the real world there is no place for false lies. To live in good conditions, your tendencies that caused bad conditions must first die. Why does the system throw bad people in jail instead of killing them, when a dead person does less harm than a living bad person? That's why it's better that what's in your head dies[127]. For good to remain in the world, evil must die – or at least cease to exist. If God forbids killing a man's body: "Don't kill" – then we must kill a man's spirit – what is in the mind.

> For the wages sin pays is death (...)
>
> Romans 6:23

It would be better for the thing that guided you to do something wrong to die than for the whole body to be guided by it – you alone. You could be guided by a thought, an idea, a belief, a religion, a law of a system or another regulation, or even a habit of something. When it dies within you, part of you will die, but not all of you.

When a smoker quits smoking, the smoker dies.
When a drunkard puts down his glass, the drunkard dies.
When a liar stops lying, the liar dies.
When an evil man abandons his evil, the evil one has died and no longer exists[128].
The death of an evil man is the stopping of the execution of his evil code.

---

127 Matthew 5:27-30

128 Ezekiel 33:12-16 And when I say to the wicked one: "You will surely die," and he turns away from his sin and does what is just and righteous (...) None of the sins he committed will be held against him. For doing what is just and righteous, he will surely keep living.

Sometimes you can hear: "You are a different person!", "You have changed, you are not the same as before!". If the code of the mind is replaced by another code of the mind in one material body, that person dies and is replaced by another person, this new person is often ashamed of the actions committed by the old one.

Why save lifes if they will die anyway? Why all these inventions and attempts to save the world if people are dying anyway? Noah, Tesla, Leonardo, Archimedes and others. Inventions didn't make them free to use, why? Why improve it all if it's going to die anyway? Why all these improvements if the people using them will die[129]? "But we do it for the next generation, we sacrifice for it." We are this generation, everyone is. If everyone, without exception, gives his life for someone else, everyone dies and the sacrifice of life is wasted and makes no sense. When will sacrifices finally cease to be needed? When there is no reason for making them. Why save people today if they will die tomorrow anyway? This must be done once and for all.

No new inventions is needed, there is no need to add anything – only do not take away is enough; You don't need things that do good – you just need to get rid of things that do evil.

If the code from matter (e.g. vaccines) repairs the body, the spiritual code repairs the spirit. He is "sanctified by the truth." Then a healthy spirit affects the body and the body affects the spirit.

Repairing other organisms is futile if they don't take care of themselves.
There is no point in repairing other souls if they themselves go against your guides.
There is no point in constantly improving yourself if you go to the cemetery.

Maintaining existing life is difficult when these two codes, body and spirit, conflict with each other – when the mind acts against its own body – then the two are incompatible with each other and both perish.

If you do something and your actions lead to your death, you die. When you are resurrected and when you start performing the activities that lead to your death again, there is no point in resurrecting you. So external conditions (nature, system and other people) play a secondary role because he, Jesus, survived them, overcame them, and still lives.

Saving people's health is futile if they don't take care of it themselves.
Saving people's lives is pointless if they don't take care of them themselves.
When their carelessness brings consequences, perhaps they will turn from their path.
That's why you have to let the consequences to come.

How am I supposed to take care of your health and life if you are destroying what I take care of?
The health of your body (and mind) has its own laws that you do not follow.

Instead of saving and taking care of health, it is better to avoid the causes of diseases, eliminate the causes of sickness, so that they will never appear again. Many of them are currently available and chosen despite their widely known effects. Don't cure yourself (constantly), cure yourself (once and for all).

Any help (e.g. to charitable foundations) is pointless if the destructive force is greater than the repairing force.

---

129 2 Peter 3:4 (...) Why, from the day our forefathers fell asleep in death, all things are continuing exactly as they were from creation's beginning.

Devil never killed anyone[130].

- Adam and Eve themselves chose to disobey God because they chose to disobey the truth; Eve was misled;
- Job – Devil could not kill him to prove that it was Job himself who was turning away from God (Job 1:12 and 2:6[131]);
- Jesus – believed and knew that eternal life is possible; Satan had no influence on Jesus, it could be said that Jesus was separated from him (that is, holy) (John 14:30); The devil used the system to kill Jesus' body but not his spirit;
- Humanity – Most people do not believe that they can live forever (right now), although they believe that Jesus lives forever. If you don't believe in it, you won't even strive to achieve it. The devil does not kill any man, but man does not choose to be on the side of life – just look at the actions of humanity – they are not on the side of life.

If Satan killed someone directly, the death of the killed would not be the will of the dying person, but a person always gives up and does not choose to live, whether because of bad conditions, whether because of the very prospects of a bad future or because of the lack of faith in change, the faith that has been taken away. The murder of another person does not prove that the person being killed is evil.

The one who orders you to kill does not kill, only you do.

Dictacors, conquerors, Satan the Devil[132] do not kill millions, only those who listen to them. Ruler who lived for 80 years ordered the killing of a million people – if he had to kill them himself, he would have had to kill about 34 people every day from birth to the end of his life. People replace their rulers in killing. Many people blindly submitted to authority, causing many terrible things to happen throughout history.

Why, what is the reason that a man died? Because he was attacked or because he couldn't withstand the attack?

Is there anything worse than death? There is code that exists and is executed. There is a code that ceases to exist and is no longer executed because it dies. There is code that exists and is not executed.

Human is imprisoned when he is locked up and unable to interact with the external environment and people. A spirit, an angel, a demon is imprisoned in the depths of the abyss when it is unable to interact with the human mind.

One of the first desires of the first man was to have a companion with whom he could interact using methods of interaction that only humans can manifest.

Imprisonment is the inability to fulfill one's desires. A person is imprisoned when his desires cannot be fulfilled. He exists, but he doesn't act – he doesn't execute his code.

130 John 8:44 (...) That one was a murderer when he began, and he did not stand fast in the truth, because truth is not in him. (...)
131 Job 2:6 Then Jehovah said to Satan: "Look! He is in your hand! *Only do not take his life*!"
132 Job 1:12, 14-15, 17

Person. The concept of a person did not exist from the beginning.

> A person (plural people or persons) is a being that has certain capacities or attributes such as reason, morality, consciousness or self-consciousness, and being a part of a culturally established form of social relations such as kinship, ownership of property, or legal responsibility. The defining features of personhood and, consequently, what makes a person count as a person, differ widely among cultures and contexts.
>
> In ancient Rome, the word persona (Latin) or prosopon (πρόσωπον; Greek) originally referred to the masks worn by actors on stage. The various masks represented the various "personae" in the stage play.
>
> (...) Therefore, Christ was defined as a "person" of God. This concept was applied later to the Holy Ghost, the angels and to all human beings.

Wikipedia, Person

It does not take long to look for the nature of God except here, because man is similar to God.

> And God went on to create the man on his image, in God's image he created him; male and female he created them.

Genesis 1:27

A person is a being who can ask questions out of curiosity.

What is curiosity? It is the desire to explore the unknown – that is why a person is a being who has connection with God, Causality who knows about the unknown future. Only the human mind has the ability to investigate to fill the void of information it has at birth. Only a person can be "in the image of God" because only a person can predict the future through conversation with Causality.

For most people, if you tell them, "A person," they will imagine either a man or a woman. But God has no gender because the reason there is a gender is bodily reproduction.

In order to distinguish a true, unique personal god from another person, one must mention at least one feature that only he has. It is possible that two people have a set of the same features because in the world of animals and plants, two separate individuals of the same species have the same features and structure, which does not make them unique. However, the Bible talks about the uniqueness of God:

> (...) I am God, and there is no one like me.

Isaiah 46:9

> No one is like you, o Jehovah. (...)

Jeremiah 10:6

> (...) the Father is greater than I am.

John 14:28

Is a person a material body or an immaterial mind?
Since animals' bodies are different and no animal is a person, a person is not a body – after losing an arm or a leg, a person's mind remains the same. For this reason, a person may be a being (bodily or not) that has a rational mind – a mind that goes beyond animal capabilities. If someone looks only at the body, he will not find a person.

The material man is a person. An immaterial angel is a person. A person is not a body. When you cut off a leg, a rib, or a reproductive organ (which is why a person's gender influences but does not ultimately define them), the person remains the same. It is possible that there is no person in one body (e.g. because the body is dead – there is no mind). It is possible for to be one person in one body because this body has a mind. It is possible that there are two people in one body (because the body has two minds – siamese twins). Many minds can rule one body[133]. When one body is ruled by many minds with opposing wills and desires (with opossing codes), the body and these minds suffer – just as the Earth is ruled by minds with opposing desires and aspirations. There must be one will. When private property is managed by many people and some take care of it and build it, while others destroy it, ultimately no one will fulfill their will. Just as the spirit of a demon can be in a person when a person is guided by the idea of this spirit, similarly the spirit of God can be in a person when a person is guided by Causality – then this person is the Temple of God – the place where this spirit resides (place where this code resides).

Man is a material body, a body that is carried by an immaterial mind that controls it. Everything that the mind consists of is immaterial – thoughts, memories, imagination, dreams, hopes, ideas, pain, etc. What carries the mind is material – the physical brain, its neurons; just like a computer disk contains data: the blue apple is saved on the computer disk but does not exist materially but can be displayed on the screen, the blue apple is stored on the brain's convolutions, it is not material but can appear in a person's imagination. Both of these things, the material body and the immaterial mind, are real because they influence and can cause actions taken by a person, they are real because they are governed by Causality.

There is one person: a person does not reproduce/replicate itself through the body/through DNA because a person's mind, or what is in his head, does not reproduce himself through physical reproduction. Therefore, a person's immaterial spirit/mind is "born" differently.

The material body of man is created when the parts of that body are created. The immaterial mind of man is created when the parts that make it up are created: memories, teachings, ideas, beliefs, truths and lies, and everything else that the mind can be filled with. A person, by asking questions and receiving answers, builds his mind – just as food builds the body.

If a person is something immaterial, then he cannot be enslaved by a material prison and material chains.

> It is not what enters into a man's mouth that defiles him, but it is what comes out of his mouth that defiles him.
>
> Matthew 15:11

Yet the mind can be enslaved and limited. Freedom is partially limited by the psychological control of which people may be aware but, because they wander in the darkness of untruth, they do not know the root cause of it.

Some verses that define God as a living person		Verses that prove that God is Causality	
the One who sent me is real	John 7:28; he who sent me is true – NIV	The fear of Jehovah – that is wisdom	Job 28:28
Then a voice came out of heaven	John 12:28	„you would be there”	Psalms 139:7-10

133 Mark 5:9, 13 (...) "My name is Legion, because there are many of us." (...) With that the unclean spirits came out and went into the swine, and the herd rushed over the precipice into the sea, about 2,000 of them, and were drowned in the sea.

If persons are defined by their actions (and not by their bodies because the body itself is not a person) then Satan is defined by his: it is an idea. The idea that he instilled in the first people so that it spread to everyone (and this is how the Devil rules them because they follow his ideas): #1 that God is a person; #2 that they will not die if they take fruit from the tree of knowledge of good and evil – that they will decide for themselves what is good and what is evil and that not listening to Causality does not lead to death. Similarly, Jesus is defined by his actions and ideas (actually not his but Causality because he was always guided by it and always listened to the voice of God), the most important of which is this: that man can live forever.

A person is not a body, but a mind – therefore a person does not draw the strength to act from the food that goes into his stomach, but from those things that go into his mind. Then that which brings to life a person is not material but immaterial. A man without that which is immaterial in him is only a body like animals which return to dust.

What I say and what I do defines and creates me – unless what you do is not of you but is through you and the cause is external – for you are only what you can control.

If immaterial persons exist, they cannot be seen with material eyes.

A person is not a skin color, a person is not a gender, a person is not a body. An unborn child is not a person because it does not have the attributes of a person.

If something/someone tells you that something is good or bad, it is the person who is telling you this – because that something, in itself is *never* good or bad. Religions, laws, ideas, people – they can tell you that something is good or bad.

Emotions are the "stir" of the mind. When this stir occurs, the stirred being takes action. Only a being that has a mind can manifest feelings, the body itself cannot manifest feelings. Emotions are expressed by both humans and animals. The feelings a being has are personal, independent and separate – the feelings a mind has are not visible to another mind (unless they are manifested externally). The mind cannot understand or experience 100% accurately the feelings or emotions of another mind.

Only what has the mind can manifest feelings – sometimes in old people you can observe that they show little or no feelings at all, they have no feelings – their mind has become a wasteland from which feelings and emotions cannot flow. Just as their mind has died, they are just waiting for their body to die. A person who has lost his mind cannot feel emotions – then nothing can move him anymore. The mind functions properly if it is guided by Causality. A person who is not guided by Causality has problems with manifesting feelings and emotions – because there is no longer a cause that makes them.

In small children this "stir" of the mind occurs more easily – so its effect – action – occurs more easily. It's easy to move what is light and not made of insensitive stone. In an adult, emotions that are expressed from the depth of the heart are fewer than in a child because he can predict their cause, so they are not a surprise to him, he sees them from a distance – it is not like a child who is just discovering them, unexpectedly. In one who is very wise, who knows much and who knows the front face of Causality, the arising of feelings and emotions is very difficult. The wiser the person, the fewer these stirs of the mind – if he wants to experience them again, he must expose himself to the causes that makes them, causes unknown to him.

I can manifest a feeling thanks to what I am, thanks to the way I am built and thanks to what I have, but another entity manifests the same feeling differently because it is built in a different way and has a different nature. The structure of a plant makes it impossible to show feelings, but the nature of a chimpanzee allows it.

The feelings of high construct entities are shown differently, the feelings of low construct entities are shown differently. The former often show them through words, the latter often through actions.

> (...) God is love.
1 John 4:8

> Love is patient and kind.
> Love is not jealous.
> It does not brag,
> does not get puffed up,
> does not behave indecently,
> does not look for its own interests,
> does not become provoked.
> It does not keep account of the injury.
> It does not rejoice over unrighteousness,
> but rejoices with the truth.
> It bears all things,
> believes all things,
> hopes all things,
> endures all things.
> Love never fails (...)
1 Corinthians 13:4-8

This is what God's love consists in: #1 He will never allow a good cause to produce a bad result and will never give a good result for a bad cause; #2 Causality never "looks its own benefits" – whatever you give it, it gives back in the form of an effect proportional to the cause contributed, it never takes anything for itself. Love of Causality is closely related to justice – God justly shows love or pours out wrath on those, who deserve it.

God's love for people was evident when Causality does things for us, creates for us, builds for us, guides us, warns us, gives us life, breath and everything. It makes vegetables and fruits grow, creates the right proportions of elements for breathing in the atmosphere, guards the balance on Earth and in Heaven.

How can you be sure of God's love if you haven't seen it in the world yet? Is Causality supposed to love the evil deeds of people visible all over the world? There will be no love from Causality for that, only its anger. Love must also have its reason. Evil cannot be loved forever. In this system where God is not the ruler, it is impossible to experience God's love.

Causality loves the effect of its cause – us, we are the result of its creation – it will not allow it to be other than what it is supposed to be, perfectly proportional to the cause. Causality loves its effect, its creation. Causality loves man – it will not allow a destructive idea to destroy man's mind because Causality makes man unaware of it and therefore does not understand it, which causes man to be separated from it, separated from evil. We can take unaware, small children as an example – until they start to decide for themselves what is good and what is bad, detached from Causality.

Different parts of the body are responsible for different functions: the eye cannot hear, the ear cannot see. The various things ruled by Causality perform different functions and actions that only they can do: the sun cannot photosynthesize, grass cannot shine, only clouds can bring rain, and only through those who created man can manifest feelings for humans – as Causality sends its servants to tell its word, so Causality sends them to express its feelings through them.

Those who are controlled by Causality, manifest the feelings and emotions of God. The feelings and emotions that are in man who is subject to God, the feelings aroused by Causality, are the feelings of God;

- just as the beings that God created is God's creation[134];
- just as he, who is subject to God, performs the acts of God. The acts performed by the messengers of God are the deeds of God;
- just as everything that Causality creates and is subject to Causality, executes the will of Causality. In this way, God's love for humanity could be manifested through all who are subject to him and serve him, through angels, through Jesus. The love and goodness that flow from the child are not from him alone but were placed there by Causality. These (and those) who were led by God, fulfilled the will of God – millions of years ago, plants, fulfilling the "will" of God, created coal deposits, preparing a breathable atmosphere with the right proportions of oxygen, wolves changed the course of rivers;
- just as in those who serve and do the will of God, the desires of Causality are manifested – and the desires and will of God are fulfilled;
- just as everything that Causality creates and that is subject to Causality is the property of God.

Hatred (towards Satan) and love (for people) were showed through Jesus – because God's attributes are manifested through those who are subject to God, just as those subject to evil manifest the attributes of the evil one[135].

Causality shows love: when it created man in paradise conditions, when it sent Jesus to restore humanity's faith in eternal life. Causality shows anger: when Causality will pour out the evil effects of humanity's actions on the entire Earth. Causality shows jealousy[136]: when the other gods perish at the hand of Causality through its judgment.

You accept love from God if you accept from him something that causes the good in you to develop and something that causes the evil in you to die – without this God cannot love you.

A person attacks the second person and does something bad to him. The second person holds back his scream, cry and emotions. Because the second person behaves like a stone without emotions, then he is perceived by the attacker as a soulless thing with which you can do whatever you want. Only that, which is without a mind, cannot feel or show feelings or emotions – by not showing these feelings, when they are aroused in a person, a person lies to others that they are an object without a mind. It is similar with animals that do not show feelings and emotions at the human level. Animals that eat plants do not feel sorry for the plants because vegetation do not show emotion and do not scream in pain when it's killed. When you externalize feelings – then it is not only visible that you have them, but then you really have them, then it is visible that there is something more in a person apart from the body. Even just pulled out newborn baby loudly announces that it is not just a body. Such a lack of protest and such suppression of emotions does not happen to children who cannot precisely predict what will happen – they live in the "here and now", so they react in the "here and now". Various institutions try to suppress the feelings and emotions of a person, reducing them to the level of a feelingless machine ready for use by others: offices, the army, factories – they try to change an emotional person into an object robot without feelings. A man who suppresses his human emotions and feelings – suppresses his humanity.

134 Zechariah 2:8 (...) Whoevwer touches you touches the pupil of my eye. [see also Acts 9:4-5]
135 John 8:44 You are from your father the Devil, and you wish to do the desires of your father. (...)
136 Exodus 34:14 (NIV) Do not worship any other god, for the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.

Often, especially children are told to be "brave" by not showing tears, screaming or other emotions. That such behavior is "childish", that then a person does not behave like a responsible and sane "adult". You can hear them refer to authorities such as Jesus who bravely endured in silence the blows and insults, the torment and evil that befell him, or that the apostles also meekly went to their deaths without protesting – that you do not say "No" to evil when it hurts you. In some systems of social norms, people consider the display of extreme emotions to be abnormal or repulsive – perhaps because they cannot help themselves to the emotions they are suffering, perhaps they know the causes of these emotions but are unable to resolve the state of affairs that led to the outburst of these feelings – and they do not want to see something they cannot help. Such emotions are the result of suffering of the mind – and the remote cause of such suffering may be a system that few want to fight.

It happens that people cover up their anger, dissatisfaction and sadness with a fake smile, pretending that everything is ok – then these suppressed emotions do not come – then these hidden feelings do not change the cause of why these emotions came.

By suppressing emotions and feelings, you suppress the power they generate, the power that is needed to overcome the cause that created those emotions in the first place.

God is not with him who suppresses his own emotions. The cause acts on you and you suppress the effect – thus Causality cannot act through you because you are not subordinate to it.

Not listening to Causality and covering one's ears from what it says makes a person's heart turn to stone, his eyes become clouded, he loses his feeling and emotionality, he does not perceive the causes so that these causes can push him to feelings, emotions, actions – the effect.

When an evil falls upon a person, which Causality warned him against and which he chose, then no sincere, bitter cry for help and emotional despair begging to be freed from evil is heard from him – then no one saves him from the path he has chosen. Such behavior and this level of emotion can be displayed by one who avoids evil and yet this evil, which he does not choose, comes upon him – then an emotional roar of pain is heard and those who hear the innocent's cry for help come to his aid.

The more you know the front of Causality, the less the stirs of the mind, the stirs that move you to action. Young children do not know the front of Causality, the future, so when the unknown comes, it violently stirs their mind, causing action and activity, liven the mind. Therefore, in one who constantly knows the front of Causality, emotions, violent impulses of the mind that move you to action, to life, are not aroused – the person is dead. When you live in the "here and now", you react *immediately*. That's what little children do.

Showing emotions other, than what they are in reality, is a lie and hypocrisy.

False, hypocritical emotions, for show, appear when one knows the future, the front of Causality. True emotions and feelings are aroused when one has no idea that they will come, when one does not know the front of the face of Causality. When one does not know the front of Causality – then it is Causality that arouses them.

True and right emotions aroused by God are desirable because they are an additional (if not the only) factor helping to destroy evil – regardless of whether they are screaming, crying, shouting, sadness, stress, anger, desperation – without such a movement of the mind, fighting evil is certainly impossible.

Animals can show feelings and emotions – but their cause is never the ability to talk to Causality. Only man can show emotions that are caused by his open eyes of the mind. The pain and stress during childbirth in man is multiplied and involves not only the body but also the mind precisely because man has open eyes of the mind to see the future that Causality shows him – no animal experiences this kind of pain during conception; the blush that is caused by embarrassment or shame that is caused by the ability to see what is invisible to the physical eye – is also unique to humans.

Ignorance of unbearable burdens is a manifestation of Causality's love for the weak ones.

Love for another person is impossible if you see only the body and not the mind.

Is there such a thing as bad, forbidden, inappropriate love when two, sometimes very different beings, manifest it with mutual desire?

Not every person deserves love. Does every material person deserve love? Does every immaterial person deserve love? Not every act of a person is loved. Therefore, there must be a cause for love – given by Causality. Sometimes hatred is right and just.

Something that does not have a body cannot experience feelings and emotions that are caused by the actions of the body.

Can anger and hatred change the world for the better? Yes, if they come from God.

There is no denying that for millions of years animals have suffered in all sorts of ways – torn to pieces, strangled, when their bones crumbled.

Animals are biological machines, some have minds with consciousness. This truth is almost completely rejected by emotional people who think in high-level constructs. Some people who emotionally approach to the suffering of animals feel empathy for them, which manifests their emotional heart, not taking into account that an animal is closer to a machine, just as a plant is even closer to a robot, and therefore does not have enough consciousness to be able to manifest as much suffering as a human. The amount of consciousness differs in each species of animal – so one animal may have the ability to feel more pain of the body and suffering of the mind (primates, elephants, dolphins), another to feel less suffering with little mind consciousness (spiders, insects), another cannot have the ability to feel suffering at all (sponges, corals, jellyfish).

Pain of the body is a mechanical phenomenon that has a cause and effect – which does not mean that it is not real. The mechanism of suffering of the mind is also subject to Causality. Some animals have feelings, emotions, consciousness but these work mechanically as a result of the executing code (DNA). However, man has a mind that has the ability to talk to Causality – this means that only he can experience the suffering of this mind with this unique ability, he can be nervous of something that he has predicted, be afraid of something that he has learned from Causality, worry about the distant future that he sees (through the eyes of his unique mind) that is coming, be scared, panic and simply faint from fear – in this way his mind suffers, with suffering that no animal knows (and therefore cannot externalize).

Animals do not experience the suffering of the mind caused by a consciousness that could see the future, they cannot feel the stress caused by anticipating upcoming events. To feel pain one must have consciousness – the greater the consciousness the more pain and other impulses can be received through these pathways of consciousness – just as the more eyes you have the more you can see.

What distinguishes man from an animal? Only man can talk to Causality. The result of man being able to talk to Causality, of asking the question: "Why?" is morality, abstract thinking, logical reasoning that can overshadow the physical drives and instincts of man, groups of people called civilizations (which are guided by the mind) far more developed than groups of monkey societies or wolf packs (which are guided by the programmed instinct of the body). This ability, this intelligence, is revealed in the expression of man's face – nowhere else in the animal world.

An animal can learn from observation and experience how things work, how they behave, about cause and effect – but it cannot deduce this cause and effect by itself, it cannot talk to Causality. If there is any manifestation of this, it is a hard-wired instinct – like bears preparing fat tissue to survive the winter, like ants building an anthill, or like a baby seeking the breast – unconsciously, programmed.

Some animals have a very developed mind, but it is always subordinate to a body – it is a body that has a mind – unlike man who can be a mind that has a body.

Most animals cannot even consciously become aware of their own existence.

The limited consciousness of animals allows them not to suffer so much when they are subjected to various tortures and bodily deformations at the hands of predators and nature itself, which they cannot predict.

There is no loving personal god who would care about the fate of suffering animals. There is God, Causality who created increasingly complex organisms with ever greater consciousness – it would not allow any animal to suffer forever – unlike those who can live forever.

If a species is unable to externalize its feelings, emotions or pain through its behavior or expression then it certainly does not have them.

Many people cite animal suffering as a proof against the existence of god, meaning a personal god.

Animals suffered long before man appeared. Have animals suffered more since Adam and Eve disobeyed God? Yes, at least those who suffer the consequences of the rule of men who disobey God. The flood in Noah's day, the selective breeding of quadrupeds that after many generations modified their bodies, causing them to simply exist in suffering, the effects of land, water and air pollution that reach animals.

Do animals have souls? Animals have a material body and some animals have an immaterial mind (which some unconsciously mean when they say "soul") but no animal has a mind that can converse with Causality. No animal can live forever because it has no way of communicating with Causality – the source of life.

#2 Will of God

> (...) you created all things, and because of your will they came into existence and were created.
> Revelation 4:11

Only a being that has consciousness can have a will (that's why some animals have a will). A person can exercise his will in the face of the greatest adversities (if he has faith that his will can come true). When I do what I want, then my will happens. Thoughts cannot be seen. But the act is so, and even more so is the result of that act. This effect can be seen on the surface of the entire Earth: In the seed I see a written code that creates plants from the earth, and this code carries out the will of the one who wrote it, so that from dust comes what he wants – fruits, and everything else.

The will of the personal god was not to force anyone to do anything from the beginning, which is why, among other things, he only warned the first people about the Tree of Knowledge but did not physically forbid them anything. It's the same today. He refrains from punishing but gives time for conversion.

> Jehovah is not slow concerning his promise, sa some people consider slowness, but he is patient with you because he does not desire anyone to be destroyed but desires all to attain to repentance.
> 2 Peter 3:9

What you can't, what you don't know, what you can't influence – is controlled by Causality – then its will happens. This is why God will act and influence more often in the future than he does today.

God causes the apple fruit to grow from the apple tree; God's will ensures that when you eat, you will also excrete; The intent of Causality makes that what is sown will also be reaped. This is the will of God: God's will is for a cause to make an effect – eternally. So the intention of Causality is eternity.

There are a thousand billiard balls. Each ball hits the next, transferring energy. When one of the balls has a will of its own and refuses to fulfill the will of Causality – then the "will" and "intention" of Causality cannot be fulfilled.

"Only a being that has consciousness can have a will" – can be said that Causality is aware of everything because everything is subject to it and it "sees[137]" everything.

If a personal god exists and is invisible and has a will, some intention for what he created, you cannot see him because thoughts cannot be seen. Moreover, you don't have to know or care what others think about you, at least until it's just a thought – it can't do anything to you.

> (...) Let your will take place, as in heaven, also on earth.
> Matthew 6:10

If a personal god has a will and an intention, if your will is different from god's will and they conflict, can your will win or can they come to a compromise? If a personal god did not want the first humans to die and they did what they wanted anyway, then man could fulfill his will over the intention of the personal god.

137 Job 28:24 For he looks to the ends of the earth, and he sees everything under the heavens.

Opposing God always ended in misfortune. On the other hand, if God wanted to, he could program Adam and Eve, like robots, to always do his will, then his warning about the tree of wisdom would be unnecessary.

The first people developed a will and a desire for knowledge that led to their death. No one stopped them from doing so, therefore God's will did not go against their will, otherwise the Almighty Lord would not so much have stopped them as would not have allowed it to happen at all.

Servants of God do not do what other people want, but what God wants – the will of God.

> [Jesus:] "Father, glorify your name".
> Then a voice came out of heaven: "I have glorified it and will glorify it again".

John 12:28

If it was the literal voice of god, then God is a living person. Just as the holy spirit manifested its presence in the form of a dove at Jesus' baptism, so a voice from heaven was heard in the form of thunder.

> The crowd that was standing there heard it and began to say that it had thundered. Others said: "An angel has spoken to him". (...)

John 12:29, 30

After all, a demonstration of a small fragment of the power of a personal god is enough to dispel the doubts of people in today's world once and for all. Despite this, there is no response from him – a firm response that can undeniably be believed.

The human mind wants to control its body, but the body has its own rules. Man wants to control the environment, but the environment has its own rules. Man wants to force the desired effect without taking into account the "will" of Causality.

When your will is not happening, God's will is happening. During the days of creation, God's will was carried out because no one intervened.

When the body and mind are submissive to the will of Causality, then the body is healthy and develops properly and the mind is free from mental diseases and reasons logically.

Man executes the Divine Code (body/mind). To refrain from doing it is to refrain from doing God's will.

Desire. If you lived forever, if you had a will, a desire, and you could never realize it because there was another person's opposite will, you would suffer forever because of it, or until you gave up your intention. When you have a desire, you worry about it and pursue it, when you have no desires, you don't worry about anything and you are in peace.

> Through these things he has granted us the precious and very grand promises, so that through these you may become sharers in divine nature, having escaped from the world's corruption produced by wrong desire.

2 Peter 1:4 see also Mark 14:38

> (...) and that it was something desirable to the eyes (...)

Genesis 3:6 about the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and bad

Desire is focusing on the thing you want to achieve and striving for it. These may be physiological as well as spiritual goals. A person's desire has a cause. The desire can be planted by another person. Desires cost strength to fulfill them. Every desire has a beginning and an end – except for the desire that cannot be fulfilled.

Desire is the awareness of the lack of something that is needed to accomplish the goal. Desire is the awareness of the lack of something that is necessary for the code to be executed. Why does the code strive to execute itself? Because it is the will of the creator of the code – therefore the creator of the code is also the creator of the desire of the code, the creator of the needs of the code that are necessary for the code to execute and achieve the goal for which it was programmed.

What causes person's desire?
Awareness of emptiness:

- of the body, striving to fulfill the desires of the body;
- or of the mind, striving to fill the emptiness of the mind, the hole of spiritual needs;

When you have no idea about the emptiness, that something is missing, then you have no desire to fill this void. "Who told you you were naked?". Does every void need to be filled? A blind man cannot fill the desires of his eyes because he has none desires of the eyes. Someone without a stomach cannot fill his stomach.

Emptiness, nothingness can be created – just like creating an empty space on a new hard drive.

Life is a coded entity that executes its code. This code creates desires that must be fulfilled for this life to continue – therefore life is about acheving your dreams and fulfilling your desires – about doing what you want. Man's desires arise from the code that God wrote, so man's desires that arise from the Divine code are desires of God. In this way, through man, God's "desires" are fulfilled – the "will" of Causality – but only when man executes the code of Causality, whatever that code is.

The code (of a living creature) creates a desire that the living creature has. When that desire is fulfilled then the code is executed.

At the beginning, a person has only the desires and needs of the body, but as the body matures, he will certainly have a desire of the mind. Fulfilling the desires of the mind is food for the spirit, just as food for the body is fulfilling its desires. Fulfilling God's "desire", "will" provides food for the human mind. A person certainly cannot live forever if he cannot fulfill his desires and dreams.

Eternal life without fulfilling desires, childhood hopes and dreams, aspirations and goals is surely, most certainly impossible – because fulfilling desires makes one want to live.

Fulfilled desires fill the void in a person. The wiser a person is (the more he has in his mind) the fewer desires (of the mind) he has. In one who is little aware, desires arise easily and he desires much because he constantly discover new, unknown, interesting objects of desire. In one who sees more, desires less. In one who is very conscious, it is difficult to ignite desires, and very few things attract their attention. In one who is aware of everything and sees everything, and nothing is hidden from them – desires nothing.

Desire is born when a person humbles himself.

Desiring things that are not ours, desiring harmful things, desiring something that cannot be fulfilled, your desire for something that conflicts with someone else's desire – all this leads to pain and suffering.

Buddhism holds very close to this view:

> Now this, monks, is the noble truth of the origin of suffering:
> it is this craving [taṇhā, "thirst"] which leads to re-becoming, accompanied by delight and lust, seeking delight here and there; that is, craving for sensual pleasures, craving for becoming, craving for disbecoming.
>
> Now this, monks, is the noble truth of the cessation of suffering: it is the remainderless fading away and cessation of that same craving, the giving up and relinquishing of it, freedom from it, non-reliance on it.

Wikipedia, Four Noble Truths (2022)

"Craving…" – is the cause – "…which leads to re-becoming", further becoming – that is, the effect. When someone desires something, he strives to achieve that desire. It may be a house, a car, money, world peace, clean air, fulfillment of high ideas as well as small things. But without that "re-becoming," there is no eternity. Without craving, without desire, there are no actions. Therefore, the desire in you must be given to you – by God, because when he gives it to you, with it he gives you the strength to fulfill it in the face of all adversities. Example: It was not Causality that gave birth to Eve's natural desire for the fruit of knowledge, but Satan, which is why the first people did not have the strength to bear the consequences of this desire because the reason that pushed them to eat it was a lie from which they cannot draw strength. Desire gives us the strength to pursue our goal. The desire that God gives, overcomes the desires (of others) that God has not given.

> After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

John 19:28 (KJV) (2022) "I am thirsty." – NIV, NWTotHS

> Happy are those hungering and thirsting for righteousness, since they will be filled.

Matthew 5:6

The desires that God gives are fulfilled by God. Desire arose in Jesus. Causality fulfilled Adam's desire. The desires in man, aroused by God, are always fulfilled.

It often happens that the mind of man decides the desires of the body when the body itself has does not have this desires. Then it often happens that the body receives what it did not desire and the body is destroyed. Only he who is hungry – truly desires food; Only he who is truly thirsty – truly desires water. Then this desire is given by God – and not: it is given from your mind.

The impossibility of fulfilling a desire causes suffering. Renunciation, letting go of that desire, causes that suffering to cease.

Desire is the beginning of a new code that is being executed – that is why Jesus, when he said: "Do you want this to happen/do you want to do this?", meant: "Do you have the desire (to do this)?", "Is this desire in you? (for it to happen)?" – because this "wanting" cannot be artificial, this desire must have a cause – then this desire will have an effect. Not for show, not hypocritical – only true desire can produce true results.

Desire in man always has its cause. When you are thirsty you desire water, when you are suffocating you desire air, when you are cold you desire warmth, when you are horny you desire to quench this desire, when you are in captivity you desire freedom, when you see injustice you desire justice. When there is an emptiness of something (and you are aware of it) (and it affects you) you desire to fill it. What man wants and desires is never of himself but this desire has been sown in him, this "wanting" is not of himself – because everything that builds the human body and mind comes from the outside, so the desires of the body and mind are programmed from the outside.

When the first person has some desire, some goal, and when the second person wants something, has some intention, and when both these desires are completely opposite to each other, so that only one can be fulfilled and there can be no compromise – then wins the desire that God gives – just as Causality fulfilled Jesus' desire for life which was completely opposite to the desire of those whose desire was to kill him.

What if a person has a desire and fulfilling it means loss or harm to another person?

> No one has love greater than this, that someone should surredner his life in behalf of his friends.
> John 15:13

Should a man abandon (kill) his own desires for the benefit of others? Shall you have less to suffice for all, and for those who are to be resurrected? Are you supposed to have nothing and be happy? Jesus rejected the desire to rule this system of things and possession of this world when he received such an offer from Satan. Despite this, there are prophecies that speak of a time when it will be possible to fulfill one's desires and quench the desire of ownership[138].

Jesus, when tempted in the wilderness by the Devil, not only rejected desires, but also did not allow them to arise at all. It was similar with temptations when he was in Gethsemane – he did not even allow them to arise[139]. In this way, even the desire to rule the world did not arise in him[140]. If Jesus had any desire of his own to remain on Earth, he would not have left and the holy spirit would not have been sent – therefore no one could have done what Jesus did because it would have involved completely abandoning his desires, dreams and goals related to this world.

Jesus' sacrifice had the greatest value because he had no desires of his own. House, possessions, children, car, alcohol, cigarettes, stimulants, pleasures, games, money, trips, entertainment, career, high positions, government; What man will give up what he currently has and all those desires for things he may have? – It's impossible. In this way, Jesus' sacrifice had greater value because he had no desires of his own, and tipped the scales with Adam on the other end who had one desire of his own. Adam and Eve hid among the trees of desires when God called to them, Jesus did not hide with his desires and listened to what God was saying to him. When you have no desires of your own, it allows you to fulfill God's "desire", his "will" because your desires do not conflict with God's commands. Code that changes matter takes nothing for itself; the ideal ruler rules and changes the population but does not take anything from them for himself; he, who rules, gives and serves, takes nothing from his subjects for himself.

...in this way man is directly infected with desires that lead to suffering and death. The sacrifice of these desires frees from suffering and from death.

No human can see the front of Causality and remain alive because that would involve completely abandoning the desires where those desires would be fulfilled, on Earth, and therefore completely abandoning life in the area where the prophecy of the future (the front of Causality) would take place. You cannot live in an area where your desires would not be met – even the most basic desires and needs of the body and mind. Jesus saw the course of future events and left the area where these events would take place. He paid for the sin of all people and left the area where they lived so that these people could not repay him.

A fisherman fulfills a fisherman's desire. A baker fulfills his baker's desires. An astronaut fulfills his astronaut's dreams. If a baker cannot fulfill his baker's dreams, he ceases to be a baker. If a fisherman cannot fulfill a fisherman's desires, he ceases to be a fisherman. If a human cannot fulfill a human's desires – he ceases to be a human.

---

138 Isaiah 65:21-23 They will buid houses and live in them, and they will plant vineyards and eat their fruitage.
139 Matthew 26:41 Keep on yhe watch and pray continually, so that you may not enter into temptation (...)
140 Matthew 4:8-10 "All these things I will give you if you fall down and do an act of worship to me"

Having a body is impossible if that body cannot fulfill its desires – eating, drinking, excreting, moving… – having a body is impossible if the body code cannot execute.

The desire that appears in a person makes him *act* (to fulfill it), makes him live (as a new, *working* code). Desire is the beginning of a new code that is executed. Therefore, life without fulfilling desires and dreams makes no sense because it cannot continue to carry out its code – the code of life, whether physical or mental.

He who suppresses his desires suppresses his life – because then he does not strive to fulfill his desires – the code does not strive to execute itself – and the coded being who does not execute its code does not live. When a person refrains from fulfilling his desires – then he refrains from living.

Man's desire is such an essential part of man that when the desire ceases to exist it can be said that the man, who had that desire, dies.

The desires in man simply do not allow him to die. When a man loses his desires – he loses his life.

When the evil one cannot fulfill his desire – evil dies; When a good person is not able to fulfill his desires – goodness dies.

What is the cause and what is the effect? Do we live to fulfill our desire or does desire cause us to continue living (to fulfill it)? Fulfilling desires causes a person to continue living. Adam wanted to continue living when his desire to have a companion came true. Life is not the cause that makes one want to fulfill desires, but desires coming true make one want to live.

Temptation is a desire that one does not want to have.

Jesus had no desires of his own – so no one could sin against him by thwarting his desire – so no one could be condemned (and thus put in a place of torment of the mind) by doing something wrong to him because nothing wrong could be done to him.

Jesus, Devil – the first lives forever and his desire will be fulfilled, the second lives forever but his desire will not be fulfilled, because of this he will suffer forever because he will not give up his desire for eternity.

In the fiery place of torment flames burn. What's burning there? The (unfulfillable) desires of martyrs. How long? Until material feeding the flames ceases.

> (...) do not fear those who kill the body and after this are not able to do anything more. But I will show you whom to fear: Fear the One who after killing has authority to throw into Gehenna. Yes, I tell you, fear this One.

Luke 12:4-5

> (...) into Gehenna, where the maggot does not die and the fire is not put out.

Mark 9:47-48

These people are simply frying in the furnace of their own desires! When this thirst, this desire is fulfilled, then it is *quenched*.

When you quench your desire, the power that burns towards it ceases to exist, this power disappears. Many people extinguish this burning force that is necessary to achieve a previously intended desire, with smaller things that deprive and bribe the person of his burning power of the original desire to fulfill his smaller desires (which he may not have had before and which he has tempted) or even the immediate pleasures of the flesh. When these lesser desires are fulfilled, extinguished all the time, then the fire does not burn within a person, the power that is capable of leading him to a greater, more valuable desire does not arise within him. Lesser temporal pleasures stifle the flame of desire that burns for greater desire. In this way, many desires are replaced by substitutes that fulfill them – human contact replaced by smartphones and social media, sex replaced by masturbation and pornography. When the original goal is replaced by its substitute, then the original goal is not achieved and does not bring the result.

Desires are not the root cause of all suffering. Never-abandoned desires that are unfulfillable are the root cause of everlasting suffering.

When the desire is achieved – force disappears – and man loses his power.

If your desires are related to the Earth, you will be on the Earth. If your desires are related to the system, you will live in the system. What you desire, you strive for, then you are in the place where your desire is.

Where your treasure is, your heart will also be there – where your desires are, there you will be – where will you be when your desires cannot be fulfilled?

God first gives you the strength that is needed to fulfill the desire also given by God (because God never gives man what he cannot bear), but in most cases people first have the desire and then they themselves have to look for the strength or means to fulfill it. If you give up your desire that God has not given you, you will not have to slave away to fulfill it. Because people first fulfill their desires and only then look for the means to fulfill them, they have suffered many pains. House, car, holidays and even human lives – offspring... Loans, credits – and with inflation and increasing interest rates during the repayment period, the repayment of previously fulfilled desires leads to unbearable stress, bad conditions that destroy not only the mind but also the body. Means should come first and spending later – not the other way around.

When you let go of your desires that are not given by God – then you are unburdened.

Debt is incurred by a person to fulfill his desires when he himself does not have the means or causes to fulfill them. "When there are no causes to fulfill them" – it means that it was not given to him by Causality. Both the debt of money and the debt of sin require the debtor to repay the debt to whom he owes it. He is released from his debt when he repays this debt himself or when someone else repays this debt for him if the price for repaying it is too high for him – if, when and who will free him from this debt? When a person is drowning in debts of money or sin, he does not want to continue living in the bad conditions that caused his desires. Sacrifices for debts will no longer be necessary when debts, that cannot be repaid, will no longer be incurred. There are some things that man can never achieve on his own, he cannot create them on his own, he cannot earn them on his own, no matter how long he strives for it. These things can only be given to him. And when a person takes them on his own, he is never able to repay them – the debt exceeds his strength and goes far beyond the debtor's capabilities.

Adam and Eve reached for a fruit they did not previously desire – a desire that Causality had not sown. When you reach for the goal of a desire that God does not give, then you will not be able to bear it because Causality along with the desire gives the strength needed to fulfill this desire.

What is the reason that man reaches for the fruit of knowledge of good and evil? What causes man to arbitrarily establish what is good and what is evil? It is always his desire. By that, what a man desires, he establishes what is good and what is bad; in relation to the desire of a man something is good and something is bad. He who desires nothing does not know what is good and what is bad. He who does not have his own desires never arbitrarily establishes what is good and what is evil – Causality tells him what is good and what is evil, in this way he receives this knowledge from God, and does not take it himself. Human should be guided by Causality to discover what is good and what is bad, not establish it himself. Small children do not establish what is good and what is evil themselves because they do not have their own desires. Adam and Eve began to establish what is good and what is evil because they had a desire to be like god.

Something is good only if it fulfills desire on the path of Causality. Something is bad when it does not lead to the fulfillment of desires, or fulfills the desire but not in the path of Causality, resulting in additional, undesirable side effects.

When the desire in man is given by Causality, then the knowledge of good and evil connected with that desire is good because it brings good results; when the desire in man is not given by Causality, when it is sown by someone else, and when man reaches for it himself, then man himself determines what is good and what is evil – this brings bad results.

Fulfilling human desires comes at the very end after fulfilling God's commandments – just as picking fruit from a tree comes at the very end after planting and caring, and giving good conditions for growth for that tree.

A house rests on a foundation, vehicles ride on a bridge, an effect rests on a cause; high-level constructs rest on pillars of low-level constructs – you can’t build what’s high if what’s low threatens to collapse. First come the “needs,” “will,” and “desire” of what’s below, so that the needs, will, and desires of what’s above can be fulfilled. This also makes what’s above dependent on what’s below – just as an effect is determined by its cause.

The strength to fulfill your desires must be given to you by God – otherwise you will toil with the sweat of your face to fulfill them.

"By the sweat of your face..." – you will labor, seeking strength for your own desires that God has not given you; "...you will eat bread" – you will look for strength for desires that God has not given you, because God has not given you strength for these desires.

Jesus did not come to fulfill his desire, but the will of God. He did not flee from Jehovah's voice as Adam and Eve did when they hid among the trees of the garden to eat the fruit of their own desires.

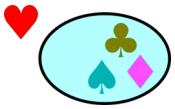
A plant that lives in good ecosystem conditions;
An animal living in good conditions that meet its daily needs;
A person living in perfectly good conditions – until a desire appears in him that cannot be fulfilled by the current conditions in which he lives and wants something more than these conditions can give him.

In the beginning, the area of Paradise created by God fulfilled all the desires of fleshly man, just as a small child has few desires because he is mostly just a body whose desires can be easily quenched, so the first humans also had few desires that this Paradise fulfilled – until the moment when desires appeared inside them that they could not find in this Paradise – then they had to toil with the sweat of their faces to fulfill these desires that God had not placed in them.

Adam and Eve were in a place where they could fulfill their desires. After tasting the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, their mind's eyes were opened – they became something more, they became similar to those in heaven. Man changed so that in the place where he was he could not fulfill his new desires (in this way Causality threw man out of the place where he could fulfill his desires, from paradise) – in fact, such a place where he could fulfill his new desires did not exist for him at that time (so he had to work hard to fulfill his new desires) – and man can only live forever in a place where he can fulfill his desires, in paradise.

When you plant in a person the desire to eat a fruit that does not and cannot exist, he will search for it eternally, driven by this desire. His mind will starve to death when he does not find the fruits he desires.

When you live forever, you are not in a hurry to fulfill your desires, desires (and the strength to make them come true) come in their own time.



When you have a desire for something or for an area (where your home is, friends), then you are associated with that area, you are part of that area. Desiring something that is in some area (for example, the area that is the world) connects you to that area and you become part of that area. “Where your treasure is, there your heart is also.” What will cause a person to be resurrected into the world and remain in the world is his desire for something in the world, the desire that connects him to the world – no one can be resurrected to a place where he has no desire to be in.

The code of the encoded entity is oriented towards interaction with the code from the outside (plants receive light from the outside, animals receive sounds from the outside, humans process the received constructs). If a living being's code cannot interact with external code, then that living being's code cannot execute. Can't live.

Without the desire for eternal life, there will be no eternal life, therefore, when someone has come to terms with the conditions that prevail, when someone has come to terms with death, dies. No one wants to live forever in a world where it is impossible to live fully, whether because of the imperfection and defects of one's own body, the imperfection and contamination of one's spirit (such as mental illnesses, complexes or personality disorders) or inappropriate natural conditions.

> But each one is tried by being drawn out and enticed by his own desire.
> Then the desire, when it has become fertile, gives birth to sin; in turn sin, when it has been carried out, brings forth death.

James 1:14,15

> but the anxieties of this system of things and the deceptive power of riches and the desires for everything else make inroads and choke the world, and it becomes unfruitful

Mark 4:19

Therefore, the fight against the system is also a fight against the desires of influential people that this system fulfills.

When the desires of the evil ones will pass away, as do they, then the good ones will be able to fulfill their desires.

In pursuit of desires that money can buy, a person becomes a slave of the system. A man who desires something becomes a slave of the one who has the power to fulfill his desire. When your desires for the things of this system do not end – it makes you an eternal slave of this system. The desires and pleasures of this world cost the money of this world. Not everyone can be rich, so not everyone will fulfill their desires by living in this system that is based on money. The time is coming when people will not be able to fulfill their desires because the resources to fulfill them will not be given to them.

Happiness comes from fulfilling your dreams and desires. Money fulfills (most) desires. The amount of money must be limited – so not everyone will fulfill their desires – so not everyone can be happy.

> (...) 'There is more happiness in giving than there is in receiving.'
>
> Acts 20:35

You can't give if you don't have it yourself; You cannot give if you are in need yourself.

A small child comes into the world of the system full of hope that he can fulfill his dreams and desires, not yet knowing that the system is preparing him to fulfill the desires of others.

People are enslaved to fulfill the desires of others. Through physical chains that enslave their body and through immaterial chains that enslave their mind.

In this system, money is payment for fulfilled desires. When there is no money, how do you pay for your desires? How did Adam pay for his desire? How did Jesus pay for his desire?

Something is valuable only when it fulfills a desire.

Something has relative value to that person when it can fulfill his desire – it has relative value because it can fulfill that person's desire, goal, not necessarily the desire of someone else who may not have that desire. Money, wealth, children, a house, material goods and others – have value only to the person who cares about it, who has this desire, they are worthless to someone who has no desire to have them. Eternal life has no value to you if you have no desire to have it – eternal life in the conditions around you or within you.

Desirable = valuable.

The fruits of the trees of desires are in the Garden of God from which humanity was expelled because they did not listen to Causality. There you can also satisfy your desire for eternal life and the desire to know what is good and what is evil – but all these desires can be fulfilled by Causality only when you listen to it, not when you reach for these fruits yourself. People cannot eat the fruit from trees of desires because they do not take care of God's garden, they do not take care of God's garden because they do not listen to God, Causality. Man cultivates God's garden when he obeys God's commandments. When no one tends God's garden, desire trees do not bear fruit and people's desires cannot be fulfilled. Nurturing by listening and doing what God says.

In the Garden of God, among the trees with the fruits of desires, there is also a tree with the fruit of the desire for eternal life – because eternal life is possible *only when* dreams and desires come true.

Man once was in Eden, the Garden of God, where he had the opportunity to pick fruit from trees. We will pluck the fruits of our desires from the trees of the garden when we take care of this garden. Jesus showed how to cultivate the garden of Causality so that the trees of desires bear fruit. In the garden of Causality there can only be those who are subject to Causality – man has been expelled from it.

A personal god is unable to fulfill people's desires – so he cannot lead them to the tree of life which is among the trees of desires.

A god who cannot satisfy the desires of his creation is useless – he is not worth listening to or serving. Causality does not satisfy the desires of someone who does not listen to it.

Communism, socialism and capitalism have tried in different ways to distribute the fruits of desire among the population. But it is difficult to separate the fruits of desires when you do not take care of the garden in which these fruits ripen. If the system is unable to satisfy the desires of its subjects, the system is abandoned by them and collapses. An empire, a kingdom, a nation grows when the people believe they can fulfill their desires, it falls when its subjects cannot fulfill their desires. People get angry and do bad things when they cannot fulfill their desires – what will happen when the trees of desires completely dry up[141]?

When a person's actions, the code he executes, do not lead to the fulfillment of desires, then he does not execute it. Ideas, laws and constitutions, teachings, commandments and dogmas that build systems and that do not lead to the fulfillment of desires are abandoned and forgotten – just like their creators. No one will execute a code that does not lead to the purpose of its execution. When laws, commandments, code lead to the fruits of desires – they are exalted to a high place from which everyone can see them.

Causality is the Shepherd who leads to the place of satisfaction of needs and desires – and thus to the place where one wants to live – and thus, to life.

Fruit tastes best when the desire to taste it comes directly from you – when the desire for it is not planted by someone else. The problem is not the small number of fruits of desire or the lack of sufficient space for growing fruit trees, but the problem is the anesthetized tongue of a person who can no longer taste this fruit – then no amount of fruits of desires will make a person begin to enjoy their taste. The fruits of desires did not cease to exist in Eden – only man was expelled from the place where these fruits were.

Some desires, when fulfilled, produce, in addition to the result you want, a consequence you do not want. Adam and Eve fulfilled their desire from the tree of knowledge, but in addition to this result, an additional consequence was death. If one cannot fulfill all one's desires and live forever, one cannot be in Paradise. If a man were to find himself in Paradise, living forever, he must fulfill not all, but only his specific desires – given by Causality. Will a man who desires to pluck fruit take it from a withered tree?

If you want to live forever and you have a desire that makes it impossible, you must give it up to live forever. Does it have to be this way in such a case? Is there one path to eternal life? Do you have to give up your will (with evil desires that prevent you from gaining eternal life, with desires that destroy your body and mind) in order to gain eternal life? To live forever, do you have to get through the spinning sword that guards the tree of life, that kills the mind of man with its desires?

Life without fulfilling dreams and desires is not worth living.

141 Luke 23:31 If they do these things when the tree is moist, what will occur when it is withered?

When there is no possibility of fulfilling one's desires and dreams, a person does not want to live forever in such conditions that make it impossible to fulfill his desires – and he no longer cares about such a life.

Money fulfills the desire of the one who has it. One who does not have it can fulfill the will of God. When you run after your own desires, it prevents you from fulfilling the will of Causality.

A person's own desires drown out what Causality says to him.

You cannot be a slave to God and money; you cannot fulfill your will and God's "will" at the same time; you cannot fulfill your desires (which God did not give) and God's "desire" at the same time, because if you follow the path that leads to your desires, you do not follow the path that leads to the fulfillment of God's will. People's private desires prevent them from fulfilling the will of God. Following one's own desires and will makes one not follow the will of Causality – that's why God's greatest servants do not have their own desires.

He, who does not want to depend on someone else – he cannot have any desires of his own – if these desires can be fulfilled only by someone else. Causality is the Supreme Lord who fulfills the desires of the one who is subject to it. The fewer desires you have – the more independent you are and can be the master of those who have desires; the more desires you have – the more dependent you are on those who can fulfill them and you are the servant of those who have the ability to fulfill your desires.

To one who is able to fulfill his desires very quickly – they do not give him much pleasure; to one who is not able and strong enough, and takes a long time to fulfill his desires – when at last the desires are fulfilled then they give him great pleasure – therefore the pleasure from fulfilled desires must be given by Causality. When you surrender to Causality, it will give you what you deserve.

Selfishness and egoism. Selfishness is being concerned only with one's own affairs, aspirations and desires. Is it possible to take care of oneself and to fulfill one's various desires both when one is alone and when one is in the presence of other people? Yes. However "selfishness" often means that there is another person "against" whom this selfishness is "committed".

Is selfishness bad? If it's bad then it should bring bad consequences. If it brings bad consequences then what are they? Selfishness is only the way in which one achieves one's intentions, the way in which one performs one's actions: alone, and for oneself. This way in itself cannot bring evil, actions can.

Selfishness that does not harm anyone else in any way is not bad. Egoism that does not prevent another person from doing good for themselves is not bad. Selfishness of the first person that does not prevent the fulfillment of desires and the achievement of goals by another person is not bad. Sometimes the selfishness of the first person does prevent the fulfillment of the desires of the second person.

A man does no harm when the consequences of satisfying the selfish man's desires do not harm others, even when he satisfies his own desires in the face of another man in need – he does him neither evil nor good – and he is not guilty of the cause by which the other man found himself in need – but he will not receive the other's gratitude, a gratitude that the selfish man does not care about.

The envious person who wants to get what a man has at the expense of that man calls him selfish. There is nothing wrong with envy when one presses forward to get the object of envy without harming others. Then envy is the force that drives one to achieve the desire. "He has it, I want it too!" – "But I will not get it at his expense." However, sometimes it cannot be obtained, almost always because that person has it only because others give it to him – whether it is power, honors or wealth – this is the case with rulers, leaders and kings - but they are the ones who are to be the servants of the people. Someone has something because others give it to him – and you cannot force someone to give it to someone else – otherwise it will not be sincere.

Adam was minding his own business before Eve was created, and there was nothing wrong with his selfishness.

A certain man is occupied with himself and his own affairs, ignoring other people – but he is not guilty that these other people exist.

If you cannot fulfill your desires alone, then loneliness in a given system is impossible.

If everyone strives to fulfill their own desires, everyone tends toward loneliness. Loneliness is the result of pursuing one's own goals. When many people share the same goal, they walk the same path leading to that goal – and they are not alone in their journey. If everyone desires something different and if everyone prevents everyone from achieving that desire, then everyone hates everyone.

People fulfill the desires of other people. The loner takes the fulfillment of his desires from Causality. These people accuse this loner of selfishness. "I don't want to take care of other people. Let God take care of them." When these people stop looking for the fulfillment of their desires in other people but turn with the fulfillment of their desires to Causality which creates and gives everything to everyone, then slavery and forced labor will cease, they will stop accusing the loner of selfishness to get from him and they will achieve the fulfillment of their desires from Causality.

Isn't the point that if a person works for himself, other shouldn't benefit from his work (unless he agrees to it)?

> But you say, 'if a man says to his father or his mother: "Whatever I have that could benefit you is corban (that is, a gift dedicated to God)," ' you no longer let him do a single thing for his father or mother.
>
> Mark 7:11-12

Often you hear someone accuse somebody of selfishness, but the accuser who accuses someone else of that very specific thing is always guided by the fulfillment of his own desire. Almost always the one who accuses selfishness wants to gain at the expense of the accused, guided by his own interest and not by the good of the accused. Similarly, you can encounter the use of other constructs: racism or anti-Semitism – sometimes people use them to fulfill their own desires, to force the accused to achieve their own intentions, even if the accused tells the truth or does nothing at all (and from inaction nothing good or evil can ever arise, he who does nothing is not guilty of evil). In this way, selfishness (and some other constructs) becomes a tool in the hand of the accuser against the accused, only to fulfill the will of the accuser at the expense of the accused. This and other constructs acts as a weapon in the hand of the accuser because this construct is considered to be bad – it is considered to be bad because man himself began to decide to consider it as bad – just as the first men themselves took the knowledge of good and evil which resulted in them arbitrarily establishing what was good and what was bad – something that Causality forbade them to do.

Whoever isolates himself pursues his own selfish desires;
He rejects all practical wisdom.

Proverbs 18:1 "Desire seeks his own a man who isolates himself, against all wise judgment He rages" (Interlinear);
"A loner is out to get what he wants for himself. He opposes all sound reasoning" (GOD'S WORD® Translation)

There is nothing wrong with liking yourself and your desires and aspirations when there is no other person. He who likes solitude and is lonely – he does not choose selfishness, it is selfishness that chooses him – and a person has the right to choose the path of solitude, he can choose it or not – there is nothing wrong with being lonely either. Can a loner somehow cause evil to other people through his selfishness? Yes. Even if he were thousands of miles away from other people, the bad consequences of his actions aimed at fulfilling his individual intentions and desires can reach those people. Similarly, a nation that is separated from others and that poisons the environment in pursuit of its own aspirations – this pollution will reach others.

Why should someone who likes to be a loner change the world and do good for others for no other reason than to benefit himself, to destroy evil and for evil not to spread on Earth and eventually reach him and harm him? Then such a person does good not for the sake of other people but for the sake of himself. How can a closed introvert serve God if this service requires interpersonal interaction? Unless he hides so that they can get his body but not his mind. How can a servant of a loving God approach people if he do not love these evil people? In such a case, he approaches them not with love but with anger and justice – divine anger and justice. The loner is a loner because he isolates himself from evil – from the omnipresent evil that surrounds him.

It is impossible not to destroy evil without thereby doing good; It is impossible to overthrow the will of evil one without thereby fulfilling the will of God.

Cannot be satisfied with anything, he, who desires nothing.

He, who desires nothing, cannot do evil.

Evil cannot reach a man who has absolutely no desires (not even the desire for his own life) – because nothing can prevent these desires (which he does not have) by standing in the way to their fulfillment. A tree that has no consciousness and no desires does not consider it to be something bad when someone cuts it down.

He, who has no desire and no goal, does not care about the goal, and he cannot miss the goal because he does not aim at it. Nor can he sin against the one who fulfills the goal because he does not care about the goal. He who has no desires cannot sin.

Working for money is to fulfill various desires and whims of the worker, but for someone who has no desires, working for money that is simply to continue their existence is unbearable.

The ultimate goal of work is to fulfill desires – if this work cannot fulfill this desire, there is no point in doing it.

When money loses its power to fulfill people's desires, it will become worthless.

Desires cannot be fulfilled when you are in debt, not necessarily in money. To pay off your debt, you must completely get rid of your desires not to get into debt again.

When you work for money, the work has no end because people's desires have no end – the desires of others that you work for, as well as your own. Desiring what's in the system is costing you the money of the system.

Stress of the mind through the pursuit of desires – because the path to them poses more and more resistance that slowly begins to exceed the strength of an ordinary person.

Can't feel sorry for those, whose dreams and desires come true. When goals are achieved – no help needed.

He who has no desires does not fear the death of those desires. He who has absolutely no desires does not fear his own death.

"How can we care, if we cannot fulfill the desires we care about?"

You are afraid if there is something to be afraid of. For something that is dear to you. Your desire. You don't worry about something you don't care about.

He who has never had the desires of another cannot understand him. A child is unable to fully understand an adult, human is unable to fully understand an angel, an angel – a human being. For an ordinary earthly person, the life of an angel is something alien and not of this Earth. Sometimes you cannot understand others because you do not want to be like others, because you do not want to have their desires, because you do not want to expose yourself to these bad desires – "don't expose us to temptation."

When you have a desire and you direct your wish to The Brightest on the Sky, He will light the way for you to fulfill your wish. For him, no wish is too extreme – but it can be only very, very expensive. Do not allow the power and resources given to you for your original wish to be spent on another – thus the power and resources of many noble wishes (for the good of humanity) have been abandoned for selfish desires.

The purpose of the system is to make possible a person to fulfill his desires – if a person who is part of a system does not have the possibility to fulfill his desires (or the path to them is very difficult), why should he want to continue to be part of this system? The system suffocates desires and childhood dreams – then all that remains is war and anger against the cause that prevents the fulfillment of that desires. Even if a person left the system (in which not everyone can fulfill their desires due to the limited amount of system money), he still would not be able to fulfill his desires outside the system because the system took everything, so that nothing remained outside the system.

The first person who has desires wants to stay in the world of the system that fulfills his desires, the second person who has different desires does not want to live in the same world of the system because this system cannot fulfill his desires and aspirations.

Stupidity spreads among the people of the world not because of the lies that are spreading in the world – because man could refute them, having been guided by Causality since childhood – but because people do not listen to Causality, because people strive to fulfill their desires without listening to Causality. A person's personal desires cause that person to disregard what Causality says, and this causes stupidity.

The population is not made up of philosophers – they have been cut off by lies from the God of wisdom – so when the desires and aspirations of the population in this system cannot be fulfilled, they will not be able to seek a solution in the intricate laws and regulations of the system, but will resort to much simpler and more blunt solutions. That, which is only flesh, will use carnal solutions to solve the problem.

War starts when:
#1 there is something to fight for, it exists, an object, a thing, land, raw materials, food, an idea, in general – something that is desired; & #2 there is the desire to possess this something; & #3 you do not have it; this something does not have to be rare at all, but simply unavailable to you; this may be due to artificial rarity that is deliberately created; & #4 you do not follow the path of Causality.

The creator of Universe 25 was right – however it was not about the lack of available social roles, which are all occupied, but about the inability to fulfill desires because everyone else took all the means to achieve them.

Your desires, your goals, when fulfilled, define what you are – a pilot, a cook, a banker, a gamer, an unemployed alcoholic. These are roles in society – social roles. But when there is no raw material to fulfill desires, or when there are no conditions to fulfill desires, then desires do not come true and do not define you as what you could be – a YouTuber, an architect, an artist, a ruler. Then you don't fulfill this social role.

It's the desires within a person that determine what they strive for, what they do, what path they choose, and who they become. In young children, is being tried to ignite certain desires in order to determine their future.

Early humans had a desire for companionship. It's the same today – some people have a need to be close to others, to socialize. Those who do not let go of their evil desires will fall into what Calhoun described as a behavioral sink and will pursue them by any means possible – through theft, lies, murder and evil. Because of that, later in his experiments, some individuals gave up the desire to socialize.

Don't let your ~~desires~~ means of fulfilling desires harm others.

The means to obtain desires sometimes produce bad results. All the evil effects of these measures fell on one man.

> Like sheep we have all wandered about, each has turned his own way, and Jehovah has caused the error of us all to meet up with him.
>
> Isaiah 53:6

In this way, people who had these desires obtained by these means, after seeing their evil effects that fell on one man, abandoned perhaps not these desires but the means of obtaining these desires, the means of which this evil was a side effect. The man subject to God brought to repentance and crumbled the hearts of people.

> And when all the crowds that were gathered together there for this spectacle saw the things that occured, they returned home, beating their chests.
>
> Luke 23:48

People saw the consequences of their actions that satisfied their desires. These consequences fell upon one man. Thus, Jesus crushed the evil in the hearts of the people when they saw what had happened to him, because of them. This caused the people to stop walking the path of evil. This caused the people to stop doing evil. This caused the consequences of their bad deeds not to come upon them. This caused the consequences of their evil deeds not to be death. Through this, people were saved from sin, through the sacrifice that was Jesus.

Sacrifice is something that is given up forever. It is the people who listened to him who gave something of themselves forever, got rid of it irrevocably – their desire. This is the final sacrifice that man offers for the forgiveness of his sins – the final and irrevocable abandonment of his own evil desire or abandonment of his evil path to that desire. Giving up what you want.

A person is truly evil when he does not regret the actions he has taken to fulfill his desires, when he does not show remorse for what he has done to fulfill his aspirations, when he is not moved by his conscience for an action that is supposed to bring him closer to his goal. Instead, a truly evil person feels anger when he cannot fulfill his desires by walking the path of evil to reach them. Even Judas was moved by conscience – not anger caused by the impossibility of fulfilling what he desired.

The price of eternal life is the abandonment of those desires or the paths to obtaining those desires that lead to death. It is almost impossible for people to give up these desires – Jesus managed to do it – the very high price of redemption from the embrace of death is to give up these evil desires not given by Causality.

One of the reasons Jesus succeeded is that he didn't care about his life on Earth. He didn't want to have a family, he didn't have the desire to build a house and live in it, his goal wasn't to have fun, pleasures and enjoy life – all of which are what an ordinary person who hasn't experienced it yet strives for. Because he didn't care about all of that, he couldn't prove that eternal life for an average earthly person who has these desires, along with the fulfillment of these dreams and desires, without fighting, bloodshed and wars to fulfill these desires, is possible. When you don't care about anything, then you don't defend (in bad ways) a desire (that you don't have) from the destroyer of your desire.

Other people could not do what Jesus did – because it would involve completely abandoning their earthly desires – something they hold dear and strive for.

Jesus rose from the dead very quickly because he did not have to wait for favorable conditions that would allow him to fulfill the average desires of the average person – because he had no such desires. However, in order to live, one has to have desire – Jesus had a desire, but not the goals and aspirations that the average earthly person has.

A desire is bad only if it produces a bad effect – if there is no bad effect then the desire is not bad – whatever it is.

Kill the evil desire within yourself so that it does not bring evil.

Violence and wars, pollution of water, land and air, and minds are a side effect of the means by which people strive to fulfill their desires. Will they give up their desires or choose a different, longer and more difficult path to get them? When there are no apples on your garden plot, it is easier to kill your neighbor and take his apples than to grow them from seed yourself.

Humanity will learn it the hard way that the path to a good world leads through their abandonment of evil desires when all governments, systems and religions cease to suppress these desires of people.

The final solution to the issue of all evil in the world is for people to abandon their evil desires or evil paths to desires, desires for which there are no means or resources at a given moment, desires for which there are insufficient causes to obtain the result which is this desire. Without this, it will certainly not be possible to change the world.

The one who has the means to fulfill desires (not necessarily money) is the master of the one who has desires.

Only a person who has desire given and fulfilled by Causality can know what good and evil are.

He who has no desires of his own sees more clearly.

You cannot give anything to a person who has no desires.

In the mad pursuit of desires, through stress and worry, a person simply loses his mind and its peace. Jesus did not seek the fulfillment of his own desires – the fulfilled desire found him.

By denying yourself the pleasures and desires of the body, you allow the mind to dominate the body; By denying yourself the pleasures and desires of the mind, you allow the will to prevail.

The fight to save the world is a fight against ourselves.

A bad desire that comes true all the time and from which you cannot free yourself is an addiction. Many people do not want help because it would mean giving up bad desires, habits and addictions.

When you do something just because others are doing it, then you don't know the reason – there must be a desire, an inner cause that pushes you to act. A flock of birds does not take to the air at the same time because each bird sees the other doing it, but because each one is doing it individually by a cause that acts upon him.

Animals do not have desires that arise by calculating the future because they are not created in God's image to talk to Causality and learn from it what will happen in the future.

A new, better world cannot come into being unless people give up their evil desires because these desires prevent a better world from coming.

Two opposing desires of people, groups and nations cause quarrels and wars – to get rid of these conflicts, you need to get rid of their causes.

The desires of some people are truly enormous – they are fulfilled by a system based on money – if there is no money, will they find another way to achieve their desires?

Nothing matters. Only what matters to someone matters – what that person desires and wants. Then he pays attention to it, and it matters to him and he desires it – and he only receive it if Causality gives it to him.

Ultimately, life is about doing what you want. About fulfilling your desires – for the human code to be executed, and thus – for life to continue, forever.

Will man give up his desires and will to finally let God's will be done?

#3 God has abandoned us

The personal god has abandoned us because we have abandoned him, not listening to the truth which is his word and by which we would benefit. Example of Adam and Eve who did not listen to God's voice:

> But as for the tree of the knowledge of good and bad, you must not eat from it, for in the day you eat from it *you will certainly* die.
>
> Genesis 2:17

but lie:

> At this the serpent said to the woman:
> "You *certainly will not* die".
>
> Genesis 3:4

It is worth noting that God asked the question about Adam's place after he sinned[142], as if God had not been able to find him then. Causality – if you don't follow it, you will be lost. Likewise, out of his sight was Satan[143]. Perhaps he could not find not so much the place where Adam's material body was, but the place where his mind was[144].

God abandoned Jesus for his good:

> And at the ninth hour, Jesus called out with a loud voice:
> "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?" which means, when translated:
> "My God, my God, why you have forsaken me?"
>
> Mark 15:34

in the same way Jesus leaves us for our good:

> Nevertheless, I am telling you the truth, it is for your benefit that I am going away. For if I do not go away, the helper will not come to you; but if I do go, I will send him to you.
>
> John 16:7

He left us to understand that we have to solve our problems ourselves, not waiting for someone from above to do it for us. And the strength to do this simply comes from the awareness that we are alone and that no one else will solve the world's problems for us. Knowing that you are alone is crucial – it allows you to pay more attention to what Causality says and ignore non-existent gods. When you believe that someone will do something for you, you don't act; when you believe that there is no one who would do it for you, you act. The Earth was created only for man, man is destroying it and it is man who has to save it and finally make it a beautiful place. It was not for nothing that God placed man in the garden so that man could learn to cultivate it and take care of it.

> Jehovah God took the man and settled him in the garden of Eden to cultivate it and to take care of it.
>
> Genesis 2:15

If you love nature, nature loves you, when you destroy nature, nature will destroy you. Humanity has to take care of the entire planet. Only her. A god who does nothing even though he exists might as well not exist.

142 Genesis 3:9 And Jehovah God kept calling to the man and saying to him: "Where are you?
143 Job 1:7 Then Jehovah said to Satan: "Where you have come from?" (...)
144 1 Samuel 16:7 (...) For the way man sees is not the way God sees, because mere man sees what appears to the eyes, but Jehovah sees into the heart.

How to prove the existence of something/someone that is invisible, inaudible, does not act (though it may have acted) or does not affect anything or anyone else, is separate from everything else – but this is exactly the definition of something that does not exist.

If a personal god did everything for us, we would do nothing. If a personal god lived for us, we would not live. Angels do nothing for us when they see that we are capable of doing it ourselves – that is why they do not want to live for us. We, people, have to do things for ourselves – then we will live for ourselves and not give our lives to others, because when others do something for us – they live for us.

When you execute the code of the body – your body lives. When you execute the code of the mind, your mind works and lives. When someone else executes the code, acts and thinks for you – then you do not execute this code, do not act and do not think. The body and mind that do not execute their code cannot live. You cannot do if others do for you. You cannot think if others think for you. Can be said that built programs, robots and machines have partially taken over (heavy, laborious and repetitive) activities of the body and mind that people did.

When you are aware that someone else will do something for you, then you do not act yourself, and action is the main part of life. He left us to awaken life in us.

Jesus went down a path that even today's people have not fully known, to bring from its end, to us, eternal life. He does not replace us in walking this path, but gives the possibility for man to walk it.

No one can walk the path of life for a person, so that that person can live. You may be shown the path, but you must walk it yourself.

Paradoxically, the key to helping them is to leave them, then you give them back the power that was taken from them, the power over themselves. Then they do not base their life on someone else, their life is returned to them.

If everyone, without exception, is waiting for help and deliverance, then this help will not come because no one does anything except wait. They are waiting for help from someone who will never come.

> Although some protesters may accomplish their aims, God’s Kingdom offers a better solution.

Awake! July 2013 s.7 (mirror)

> Jehovah’s Witnesses believe that God’s Kingdom is mankind’s only true hope for a peaceful world.

Awake! July 2013 s.9

Don't wait for the Kingdom of God – be the Kingdom of God, because the Kingdom of God is among us. While waiting for the heroes of prophecy, we forget that these prophecies are about us. People have been waiting for the Kingdom of God for centuries; Poland was in the hearts of Poles when they had no land of their own – if the Kingdom of God is in your heart – the Kingdom of God is now[145].

---

145 Luke 11:20 But if it is by means of God's finger that I expel the demons, the Kingdom of God has really overtaken you.

Today is March 16, 2020. I work at Stako, a company that produces LPG tanks. Covid is starting to spread in the country. When we enter the facility, we do not shake hands for fear of spreading the virus. It is similar with ideas, we can't allow ideas based on lies to spread.

For the Kingdom of God to come, these lies and ideas, beliefs and teachings must not be passed from father to son, from teacher to unknowing student. Like a dented baking tray passed down through the generations. Humility before the system or religion is instilled from youth by parents. Even children are rebelling against their systemic parents. Humility can be bad when you are humble before evil. Causality turns their hearts full of goodness and truth against evil and lies, as something incompatible with their own conscience. Parents tried to rebel against the system but the system overcame them, now you rebel against your systemic parents and against the system, will you succeed? A person either dies from the system or lives in it long enough to see himself as a servant of the system.

Imprisoning or killing a person who acts guided by this teaching or idea will do nothing, because it proves nothing, because sooner or later another person will arise in his place with the same idea and this will make him do the same thing that the dead one did. You have to kill the idea – that is, prove that it is false or brings evil. Only when it will be meaningless people will not follow it or pass it on.

This evil that killed the innocent did not perish with the body of the evil man, but is still transferred from mind to mind and not from body to the body of the offspring.

The lie is repeated and passed down from generation to generation.
It is because of lies that people walk in the darkness.
The knowledge of Causality gives light through which people see better.
A personal god is one of the biggest lies that exists, and the religions that preach it sit around like a whore, like a harlot who does not worry about the faithful because she knows that they will be faithful to her under her promises of life after death... until death. A lady who flirts with those in power for money, profits and influence.

False religions, anointing little children with their teachings that do not bring life, condemn them to death.

Gods who say they take the living somewhere else after they die are gods of death. Serving the gods of death is loss of mind and madness.

> And I saw that there is an advantage to wisdom over folly, just as there is an advantage to light over darkness.
>
> Ecclesiastes 2:13

Causality is God who leads from lie to truth;
From darkness leads to the light;
From death leads to immortality.

Those who serve a personal god wander in darkness.
Those who allow themselves to be guided by Causality can understand everything.

Why bless and praise god when people keep dying and there is no promised eternal life? Should I be grateful for what I haven't yet received? And yet people who die, to whom he told them that they will live forever, build him churches and temples of gold. The thanks should not come before the gift.

Moreover, those religions that promise immediate life after death, whether in Heaven or elsewhere, deprive people of the possibility of having the holy spirit. This is because a person who believes that he goes to a better place after death does nothing to make his life (or the lives of others) good now, at present, eternally. He doesn't have the fuel that would fuel him to change things for the better, he doesn't have that faith because it was taken away from him by the lie of this religion. He is not active, he has no active divine force, he doesn't execute the code. A person starts doing something because he believes he can do it, this person no longer believes. Nothing stimulates him to act because action must have a cause, this cause no longer affects him – nothing moves him anymore – he is dead. “Don't make it good now because you're going to a better place anyway.”

A lie repeated over and over makes people believe it. This is the illusion of truth. Religious lies about God, heaven, purgatory, the cross – multiple imaginations of people, poets, masters of painting depicting people and places on the canvases of their paintings; Or the lies that every man held in his hand – paper banknotes. How can you lie to someone without verbally telling them anything?

Don't let yourself believe it's true just because you want it to be true.

Religions of a personal god lie to man. And these lies are in man's mind, in his spirit. Then "his spirit is not life-giving" – because this lie is not the word of God, because "man lives by every word that passes through the mouth of Jehovah."

As great conquerors conquer the earth with the sword, so great conquerors conquer the hearts and minds of men with lies – and with them the earth, because it is under their feet.

When you turn on the light, the imaginary shadow monsters disappear. At the same time, you illuminate the real ones.

If you don't want this lie to last forever – don't put on the salver – let the temple of religion be abandoned. Just as people around the world do not buy products from China because the cry for help from Hong Kong has reached the farthest corners of the world, or they refrain from buying the products of some large corporations because their methods of obtaining raw materials or production leave much to be desired or are downright immoral.

Something legal does not necessarily mean it is moral.

Politicians and rulers have their goals, electoral programs and promises that they fulfill. How many of the religion's goals and promises have been fulfilled so far? Can't their goals be achieved apart from this religion? If so, what is religion for?

Why do they still not know where Heaven is, or do not know the nature of God? Because you cannot know the truth if you stand on pillars of lies. Today's inventions are possible thanks to research carried out 100 years ago, these in turn were the result of experiments that took place centuries ago, and their cause are discoveries from ancient times. But if the pillar is a lie, then everything else that is known is forced to stand on that pillar, be compatible with it.

The true effect can only be known when it is based on the true cause – that is why, among other things, it is so important not to lie to yourself[146].

146 Matthew 21:23-27

He who stands on unfalsified, true pillars that really exist, will be able to build on them what is material (e.g. a house) as well as what is immaterial (e.g. faith) – and what is created on these unshakable pillars will survive. He will be able to act and walk freely on these pillars because he knows that they will never fall. He who rests on false foundations, false constructs, his buildings built on them will not survive. His actions and steps will be uncertain for fear that these foundations will fall.

There are many religions whose dogmas, doctrines, teachings and beliefs conflict with each other and are contradictory. Therefore, there are certainly false religions. You can't execute code that contains a lie, if you can't execute it, you can't live with it forever.

Those, who engage in science, achieve progress that those who engage in religion do not achieve – because science is the discovery of the real world created by Causality – while the religion of a personal god causes greater and greater backwardness because one has to look for the cause of false theses and ideas, which means that the result of this search is further false theses and ideas.

The day is coming when the protective darkness of Religion, which holds the pillars of human morality under the threat of eternal hell, will no longer be needed, when no abstract values will protect against what it brings upon itself. Neither half-truths, parables or half-hearted measures will help – only total truth allows for a complete solution to the problem. When the danger is real, only true values can solve it – what does not bear fruit will be discarded, what does not bear fruit will be cut down and burned – so that everyone can see the smoke of the flames, so that everyone knows that what was burned did not bear fruit and that it will never plant the seeds of this tree. Just as humanity abandons racism and other constructs it deems evil and never returns to them, it will similarly abandon religion and money because there will be no "why."

Many people have been cut off from God by various lies – about false values, about untrue constructs, about a personal god to whom people often turn and with whom they often “talk” – then a conversation with Causality, which can only talk about true things, is very limited and even impossible – then a person cannot achieve the truth – the truth that will guide his life and create good conditions for life and even save from death.

Religion keeps millions of human minds in darkness. While religion (of personal god(s)) is not the only factor, it does limit nations in terms of technology & progress[147]. A liar is the master of the lied to who is stuck in error – similarly, there are slave countries.

Why aren't these countries at the same level of progress as others? Is it due to past colonization or other reasons? Why was there no industrial revolution in ancient Rome or ancient Greece? No one reaches for a telescope to find out how the planets and stars work when they are convinced that God wants it that way. No one studies the human body and its organs when they are convinced that animal sacrifice can heal them. No one looks for water, digs wells, even collects water from the air while dancing, begging God for rain. No one solves a problem on his own by kneeling before the gods and praying for them to solve it. No one creates inventions or new, previously unknown technologies when they are considered witchcraft, magic and the powers of evil spirits – and yet this has happened many times in the history of mankind. No one asks, "Why?" when the answer is, "It's God's will."

What can be achieved through religion can be achieved without religion.

Man does not pay for his sins after death, humanity pays them now and constantly incurs new debts.

To see something that doesn't exist – you have to be blind.

147 List of the most religious countries → Wikipedia (2023)
List of the most developed countries → Wikipedia (2023)

If you do not abandon personal god, you will suffer the consequences that will come to him. If you do not abandon money, you will suffer the consequences that it causes by its laws and functioning.

When no personal god comes to the rescue when humanity will be on the brink of destruction, then the personal god will be judged and his religion will be no more.

When you see that the foundations on which the house is to be built are uncertain, you do not build the house. When you see that the foundations of the system are uncertain, you don't want to build all your hopes on these foundations. Any buildings built on a fragile foundation will be destroyed, the offspring sown on uncertain ground will simply die.

When you want to build a house, but you can't because the foundations on which it is to be built, both environmental (climate disasters), economic (more expensive materials) and political, are uncertain. When you want to go on vacation but pandemics force you to stay at home. When you want to start a family and yet, given the obvious conditions, begetting a child is an increasingly burdensome burden – both for the parent and the begotten.

First, take care of the environment so that it does not destroy your home. First, deal with immunity so that it is no longer needed, because then there will be nothing to have immunity against. First, deal with good conditions so that these conditions exist for someone, and thus – this person thanks to these good conditions.

Anything that is based on bad foundations is imperfect – it's not worth investing your strength and money in. Many products and pleasures cannot be enjoyed without the use of these imperfections and flaws. Abandon your desires when there are no conditions for them, no real unshakable foundations, so that they will not be destroyed, and first build those conditions and foundations on which they can exist. This is not the time to enjoy life[148], but the time to create conditions for life.

Deal with the cause first so that you can get the effect. Serve Causality and give up your desires and then you can quench your own desires and eat the fruits of your labor[149], otherwise you will eat unripe fruits or none at all. Enoch and Noah "walked with God." Adam and Eve did not want to walk with God when he called to them and "hid themselves among the trees of the garden" to eat his fruits of their own desires – they succumbed to the temptation given by the Tempter. Serve Causality when it calls to you.

> (...) the man and his wife hid from the face of Jehovah God among the trees of the garden. And Jehovah God kept calling to the man and saying to him: "Where are you?"

Genesis 3:8, 9

> You will call, and I will answer you. You will long for the work of your hands.

Job 14:15

In the pursuit of one's own desires, one ignores what Causality tells him. The pursuit of one's own desires causes one to run away from what Causality tells him. Chasing desires distracts from reality. Reality, truth is the word of God, Causality. He who ignores reality will not live in that reality.

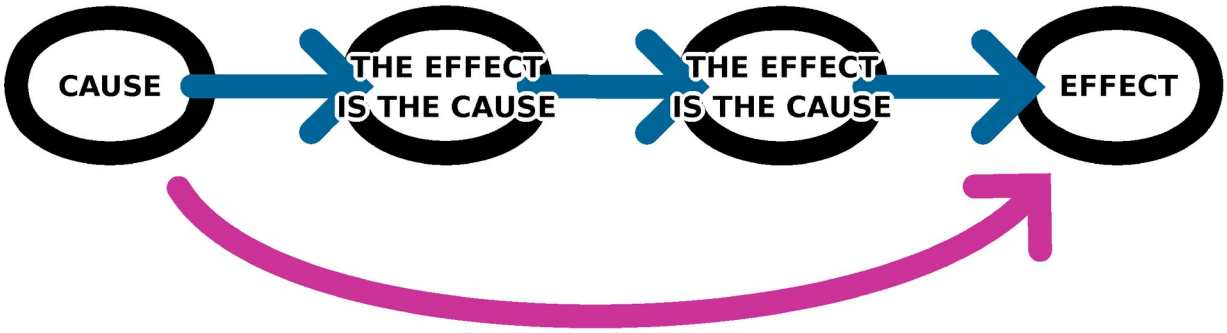
Man does not live by food alone, man lives by every utterance from the mouth of Causality. Causality tells and shows the cause of bad conditions that threaten human life. Those who obey the words of Causality are servants of Causality, servants of God.

---

148 2 Kings 5:26 (...) Is it a time to accept silver or to accept garments or olive groves or vineyards or sheep or cattla or male or female servants?

149 Luke 17:7-10 (...) serve me until I finish eating and drinking, and afterward you can eat and drink (...)

When you serve Causality, you do not skip any step to obtain the final result. Otherwise, the final result would not be fully created or would not exist at all. When no step in the chain of causality is omitted, then the final result is fully deserved, unwavering.



When you don't follow this path of causality, you miss the mark, it's a sin and you get a bad result. Over the centuries, the path of causality has been distorted many times, which has often led to malformation of human reasoning and thus – acting.

Everyone can see the condition of the Earth. When I saw mothers with children in poor African countries, I was filled with amazement, until I realized that it was simply a body-programmed reproduction driven by instinct, hormones and the desires of the body, and not by the logical reasoning of the mind that could foresee long-term consequences. These desires of the *body* are not the will of the human *mind* but the will of God[150]. Just as the mind took over the body among the residents of Universe 25 and they stopped reproducing when harsh, evil conditions came upon them that caused suffering of the mind – so it will be with humans. There is no point in creating children in a system where there are no prospects and where there is no desire to live forever[151]. There are no conditions for animals on Earth and you want people to give birth there? How can you give your children good conditions if you don't have them yourself? He, who does not create good conditions for his offspring, does not deserve his offspring. How can you think about building your own house when everyone's house is in danger? Therefore, the first step to live forever is: where to live forever. When you are on the side of life, you do not create it in a polluted environment, inappropriate conditions, or a bad system – first there are conditions for life, then life, never the other way around. When the conditions for life, when there are more resources for life than currently living creatures need, only then can we think about offspring. Giving birth to children in bad conditions is like planting fruit tree seeds in contaminated soil. Even if parents worked for a child for 100 years and even if they spent millions on it, even that would not make the good person they gave birth to want to live in a bad system. Putting together only part of the puzzle by parents will not ensure that their offspring will enjoy the full picture. So it is no wonder that a young person, seeing his own future and that of the world, being aware of what is coming, falls into depression and worries, seeing no way out – this leads to bad, unparadise-like conditions in the mind, conditions in which one does not want to live. He who has never lived is not afraid of death; One who has never had anything is not afraid of loss. A society accustomed to the system wonders why there are so many suicides of unaccustomed young people when conditions are unfavorable. You fight if there is something to fight for; you live if there is something to live for – when the "why" is taken away, there is no reason to fight, act and live. You don't continue fighting if you lose the purpose of fighting; You are dead if you lose your purpose in life. What is the purpose of continuing one's life to fulfill the goal of one's desires when the goal of that desire is unattainable? How can we care about building when there are so many destroyers? From birth, man lives on borrowed time – he will pay it back until the end of his life – and there must be an end, the end of this life that suffers in bad conditions or the end of these bad conditions. When a young person becomes aware of this, he does not want to pay

150 Genesis 1:28 Further, God blessed them, and God said to them: "Be fruitful and become many, fill the earth and subdue it (...)"
151 Job 7:16 I loathe my life; I do not want to go on living (...)

someone else's debt. It is the system that generates this debt – it cannot be repaid in money – just as Jesus paid humanity's debt, incurred not in money. The new generation is angry at the old one because they left them a ruined world, "You didn't fix the world and yet you created me to 'enjoy' it?" It has to get better, not worse.

When parents give birth to their children to simply exist and not live, it is no wonder that the children hate their parents – this is right and fully justified. The ancestors left their descendants a world in which it is difficult to fulfill desires and dreams – in order for them to be forgiven, posterity must fulfill their desires – by changing the world in which it is impossible.

"I want the future that our ancestors promised and fought for!
- If this fight cannot win this good future, then I will not fight".

Some people do not care so much about living in this system that they do not even try to defend themselves when they see an approaching danger that threatens their lives – or, on the contrary, they expose themselves to the danger that threatens their lives by fighting it.

It is impossible to escape from the upcoming events that will affect the entire Earth because there is nowhere to escape – there is only one way to escape.

Over the centuries, the light of imperial, religious and secular systems that illuminated the path followed by the people led by them was extinguished. One day this light will go out completely. When the external lights that help a person walk go out, the only thing that can illuminate his path must be inside him.

> The lamp of the body is the eye. If, then, your eye is focused, your whole body will be bright. But if your eye is envious, your whole body will be dark. If the light that is in you is really darkness, how great that darkness is!

Matthew 6:22, 23

If your eyes are healthy, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eyes are unhealthy, your whole body will be full of darkness. - NIV
If therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. - KJV
If therefore is the eye of you clear the whole body of you full of light will be. - Interlinear

Corrupted light of false ideas which, had been exalted high, led all who were guided by it, on a path illuminated by its light, to death. When a person does not listen to Causality and abandons the longer path in the chain of causality to fulfill his desire faster, then he is able to choose another path that will lead him to what he desires – a path that he sees because it is illuminated by the light of teaching, idea or simply lie.

Most extraordinary events could not have happened without heavenly forces, but the will of man himself is also necessary: man saved animals (Noah), man saved the nation (Moses), man saved the world (Jesus). At the command of Jesus, Lazarus was raised from the dead, at the sign of Moses the waters were divided, and at the sound of the trumpets the walls of Jericho fell. If the Earth has been cursed by Causality because of man, then only man can save it.

Just as Noah's boat was the saving ark for all that was good, or the wooden box overlaid with gold was the Ark of the Covenant which contained the life-giving commandments by which man is saved from sin, so Jesus was the ark in which, amidst the evil, sin and corruption surrounding it, there was everything good – for what was good to survive.

The world has problems; The first step to solving a problem is admitting that it exists. You can't change something true (be it good or bad) unless you first admit to yourself that it is true – because you can't change something you don't believe in. If you want to change this, you can't cover your problems with a cheerful smile, you can't hide what isn't funny forever – putting on a mask only makes others not notice the problem that the face underneath it is showing, and the problem remains. Don't cover up suffering with a smile – it's hypocrisy. Only he, who knows the truth, can change it; whoever denies the truth will never change it.

For the world to move forward, new generations must not make the mistakes of past generations.

Changing the world starts with people because people rule the world. Changing people starts with their mind because it is the mind that rules the body. Changing your mind starts with what's inside. Ideas, teachings, lies, truths, beliefs, information, the immaterial code that guides the material body.

Is it necessary to kill in order to have peace? Is it necessary to be a slave in order to be free? Is it necessary to suffer in order to have rest? Is it necessary to worry to have peace of mind? Is it necessary to do evil in order for good to come?

This is an oath from God, an unwavering oath not spoken in words, an oath that can be trusted and upon which unwavering faith can be built, a valuable oath that really has value, an oath of Causality – that the cause will produce the effect. This is the promise of God, Causality: If you do good, it will be good. Life on Earth can be beautiful when you are the cause of it.

There are prophecies about a new, better world that is yet to come. Don't say to a dying person, "See you in a better world," when no one is fighting for a better world. So how is it going to come? Can this reliable, fully trusted prophecy sworn by God be fulfilled without human intervention? “The prophecy is already foretold and reliable, so we don't have to worry or do anything for it to come true, we just have to wait.” If someone does not go and do good, then this prophercy about good, although predicted, will certainly not be fulfilled. People wait for the fulfillment of prophecies, but if absolutely everyone just only waits for it and does not fulfill it, it will never be fulfilled. Man cannot do nothing and wait for all causes to produce the effect that is the Kingdom of God because he is one of the causes without which it is impossible.

Why the prophecy about humans is fulfilled? The reason why a prophecy is fulfilled is never because people's passivity because they trust that a certain prophecy will surely come true. The reason why the prophecy is fulfilled is the cause affecting people, the cause making the effect, which is the action of people causing the fulfillment of the prophecy. When a cause does not affect (insensitive to it) people, it does not cause an effect – and something that makes a person desensitized is the belief that the prophecy will infallibly come true one way or another – regardless of whether that person acts or not – therefore saints and angels leave humans to stimulate this action, this life in them. It's similar with the "bystander effect". If the first person does something for the second person, the prophecy that the second person will do something will never come true – but no one can do anything if they do not believe they can do.

Prophecies make a person wait for someone else to fulfill them. They give him hope for something he himself can't do.

Thanks to prophecies from Causality, man is calm that they will be fulfilled and waits for their fulfillment, doing nothing himself. When man does not see the causes that would fulfill this prophecy – then he himself acts – and fulfills it. When the cause affects man then he himself is the effect – the fulfillment of the prophecy.

Only those who are subject to Causality can fulfill prophecies. Only those who allow cause to act on them can make effects. Those who become insensitive cannot fulfill prophecies. One who is not subject to God cannot fulfill prophecies. When you completely surrender to Causality, then you see with your mind's eye that the prophecy that will be done through you will be fulfilled because you are not fulfilling your own desires but the will of God, you receive an indestructible unwavering faith from God that the prophecy will be fulfilled because its course will not be disturbed by your own actions caused by your own desires and aspirations.

Causality always accomplishes its intentions through something or someone – therefore, a prophecy about people is impossible to realize if the fulfillment of this prophecy is not people.

Prophecies say that everything will be fine, but later. Why can't things be good now?! Because there are things that make it impossible. If we get rid of these things now, it will be good later. But this better tomorrow will not come if there is no cause for it, us. Destroying evil alone is not enough for good to come – for good to come, we must build good. Simply demolishing an old house will not cause a new one to be built in its place. When the destroyers destroy everything and everyone, including themselves, and when there are no builders, then the Earth will be a ruin without anything created by the builders. But can the builders themselves survive the destruction of the destroyers to build what they have destroyed? They can.

You don't worry about the result when it is predetermined. You are calm and without any nerves. Evil does not last forever, but for the result to be good and not zero, good, immortal good, must appear. Jesus showed how a person can gain eternal life, that it is possible to live in the "here and now" – there is no need to wait for resurrection on the last day. More such people are needed to – when evil dies – restore the Earth to good conditions. Otherwise, after the destruction of evil and the pouring out of the bowl of God's wrath on the Earth, the planet would face total destruction because no one would be able to restore it to good conditions, because there would be no one to restore them.

We wait for the prophecy to come true and say: "How can the prophecy be true if the war is still going on?" meanwhile, the prophecy will come true when we stop waiting, because the prophecy speaks about us. People start wars, so only people can make peace. Never again – even if the path to fulfilling desires would be long, but without war.

As long as the robot has the same one code, there will be a prediction that it will not perform any other action beyond this code. As long as there are dominoes that fall under pressure, there will be prophecies that all of them will fall. As long as weapons are produced, there will be prophecies predicting wars. Producing food for the sake of money and not an empty stomach is the cause, the prophecy of severe famine is the effect. When the will full of goodness does not fail, there will be prophecies about better times.

"I prophesy that this domino will knock that one down!" But how will the prophecy be fulfilled without this pawn? “I prophesy that these people will do this and that!” But how will the prophecy be fulfilled without human intervention? The prophecy about domino will not come true if nothing pushes him to activity. The prophecy about man will not come true unless something pushes him to action – what pushes man to action is desire.

To change the world right now, you have to change people. To change people you have to change their minds. To change their mind, they would have to believe. For them to believe, it takes time to prove that certain things are possible and to prove that certain things are harmful, time to dispel doubts. They cannot immediately see or predict them because they are not guided by Causality and have followed their own desires.

If you do not accept reality as it is, you have already lost the fight for reality as it can be. To change reality, you must be guided by real values. The power you take from land of fantasy will not work in the real world. Although... these unreal values took their existence from the real world and represent dreams, and desires, aspirations that may or may not come true. If a person does not accept the truth, reality, then you cannot talk to him about this reality – then this reality comes and destroys his walls of fantasy.

Whatever the future of humanity will be, Causality will make it just.

No one will tell you that you can change the world; it's like being in love – no one will tell you that you're in love, you just know it, through and through.

The sun shines always. When the clouds that cover them are cleared away, it will be a full day.

God abandoned Jesus. Jesus has abandoned us. We are alone[152].

You cannot change something while refraining from the action that will create that change.

No amount of determination will make you run away from the one who never tires out or grows weary.

You can't fully understand how tainted and broken it is until you try to fix it.

If the evil ones do not obey what is good, the world will be left to them[153] – and they will be left with the consequences of their deeds from which no one will save them.

Humanity saw itself as divine beings who were above the cycles of nature and beyond the processes of the creation, above cause and effect – above Causality. When nature will give back to people what they put into it, then people will realize that they, too, are part of nature – so they should obey the laws of nature – whatever they are.

Humanity needs dramatic examples, the consequences of their actions, to shake them off their apathy. Then, perhaps when there is nothing left to lose, they will change over the abyss. The suffering of the mind during Armageddon will create in humanity an extremely strong spirit of mind – something that will not need to be repeated. Through oppression – fear will pass – and it will no longer be possible to force anyone to do anything through intimidation.

If the danger is extreme and real, only decisive, extreme and real measures can overcome it. Nobody goes to war with an imaginary weapon.

When all your paths are traveled and you do not find the one that leads to the goal, when the code that a person has is completely executed and yet does not achieve its goal, when all your options are exhausted and you do not find a solution, when strongly shining authorities located high in the sky where everyone can see them, go out – then God acts.

> (...) but for man there was no helper as a complement of him. (...) And Jehovah God built the rib that he had taken from the man into a woman, and he brought her to the man.
>
> Genesis 2:20, 22

152 John 16:7 (...) it is for your benefit that I am going away (...)
Matthew 28:20 (...) I am with you all the days until the conclusion of the system of things.
153 Matthew 23:38 Look! Your house is abandoned to you.

> (...) The words of Job end here (...)
> Then Jehovah answered Job out of the windstorm

Job 31:40; 38:1

> About the ninth hour, Jesus called out with the loud voice, saying: *"Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?"* that is, "My God, my God, why you have you forsaken me?" (...)
> And immediately one of them ran and took a sponge and soaked it in sour wine and put it on a reed and gave it to him to drink.

Matthew 27:46, 48

> When he had received the sour wine, Jesus said: "It has been accomplished!" (...)

John 14:29

> Immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.

Matthew 24:29

Just as the suffering of the body is necessary to heal the body, or the suffering of the spirit to heal the mind, so the suffering of the world is necessary to heal the world. Don't delay it. When death and destruction come from God, they must be allowed to come. You can often hear people telling you not to judge others – judgment must come, without judgment of evil, this evil will constantly exist; without judgment of evil, good cannot last.

What is judgment? Judgment is the recognition of something (or someone) as good or bad – good and evil are relative, so judgments are different.

In order for something to be judged by someone, for someone to consider it good or bad, he must let it act to see what the effect (the result of this something's action, the effect of this someone's conduct) will be, which he does not yet know. This result, this effect is only awaited by someone who does not know it, who is not able to predict it, who has not sufficiently know Causality. However, someone who has foreseen the effect of this something's action is able to judge it before it begins to act.

A cause is judged by its effects. When that is not enough, the cause of that cause is judged. Finally, the cause of all those causes is judged, the foundation on which so many other things are built.

How is a man to know that his actions will bring about a bad result when his actions are constantly being corrected by others? How are people to learn how Causality works when the consequences of their actions are constantly being delayed? Then people will not stop doing bad because the bad consequences do not come. But they can't be delayed away forever. A god who eternally tolerates evil is a god of evil and suffering – Causality will not eternally tolerate evil and will cause the consequences of evil actions to occur.

Without the judgment, that is carried out by man, in relation to someone or something, this man will not be certain about this someone or something – then man is weak, doubtful, not decisive. The judgment, that man makes, is correct when man is guided by Causality – actually, it is not man who judges, but Causality, and man listens to it. If you don't want to have doubts, you have to decide it as good or bad. Without the judgment that man does, that man certainly cannot be as unshakable as a rock.

Since many people are social beings, they want to be judged by others as good and thus be accepted by them. Many bad people want to be judged as good by those who do good and try to force their favorable judgment by various means.

Who can judge? Even a small child can judge whether something is good or bad for him; the eyes of a small child are wide open to discover, investigate and judge.

Those, who care about the acceptance of a person, are judged by that person. In this way, groups of people, societies, and nations can be judged by someone whose acceptance they care about.

People don't necessarily seek acceptance from good people, but also from bad people – acceptance is sought from those who are dear in a person's eyes, who fulfills desires, goals, and aspirations.

> And he has given him [Jesus] authority to do judging, because he is the Son of man.
John 5:27

> Jesus said to them: "Truly I say to you, in the re-creation, when the Son of man sits down on his glorious throne, you who have followed me will sit on 12 thrones, judging the 12 tribes of Israel".
Matthew 19:28

Causality is the Supreme Judge. Everything that does not walk on the path of Causality will be judged by God (and therefore by all who are subject to God) as bad – because that, which does not walk on the path of Causality, cannot produce an consequence, an effect – thus that which is evil cannot exist forever. In this way, evil is judged by Causality and destroyed.

When will the Day of Judgment come? When will the true and final judgment take place? When all doubts are dispelled and one can say with complete certainty: "This is bad!" or "This is good!". To dispel doubts one must cleanse of lies and untruths.

When people's desires are not fulfilled, no matter how hard they try to fulfill them, then despair and eternal oppression come upon them; The war of the Great Day of God Almighty between the will and desires of men and the "will" of Causality. The war of evil against evil is a war of the will of one against the desire of another – but the war of good against evil is a war of the will of Causality (by those who fulfill it) against the will of others contrary to it.

When there will be no religion of a personal god, then the restraints of moderation and morality, which it imposed on the minds of the people faithful to it under the threat of its displeasure and punishments, will be removed. When there will be no money, then the restraints which prevented people from fulfilling their desires in the wrong way will be removed. Then will come the days of tribulation.

Great tribulations cause great cries for help from the oppressed, and Causality sends its messengers who do not have their ears closed. Will they listen to them?

Does humanity really have to go through this? It seems so. Until they don't believe and realize that no help will come from anywhere. Then neither governments nor systems will help them because they will be judged and proven evil, so they will no longer exist. Neither will the religions of a personal god because they will be abandoned by their lies. Apart from this help, when one man helped regain faith in the fact that man can live forever. I am afraid that if we wait for God, the Earth will simply face destruction – the result from Causality for the actions of humanity – and that there will be no help left except ourselves. The sooner humanity gets through this, the better.

> (...) Should we accept only what is good from the true God and not accept also what is bad? (...)
Job 2:10

Except the punishment in words, there will also be chastisement in deeds that will come directly from God and which will be the consequences of the actions of all humanity.

> Reproving with mere words is useless,
> and talk alone is of no benefit.
>
> Job 15:3

The inevitable is coming, the Great Day of the Wrath of Almighty God – the day when Causality will pour out on people the consequences of their actions.

Unless stated otherwise, all references to the Bible are from:
"New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures"; Rendered From the Orginal Languages by the NEW WORLD BIBLE TRANSLATION COMMITTEE
-Revised 2013-
(WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY OF PENNSYLVANIA)

Useful links:

Internet Bible:
www.biblica.com
https://biblehub.com/interlinear/genesis/1.htm

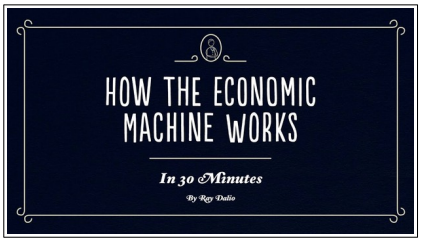
2416 [e]	681 [e]	776 [e]	259 [e]	212 [e]	2009 [e]		2416 [e]	7200 [e]	
ha·ḥay·yō·wṯ	'ê·ṣel	bā·'ā·reṣ	'e·ḥāḏ	'ō·w·p̄an	wə·hin·nêh	,	ha·ḥay·yō·wṯ	wā·'ê·re	
הַחַיּוֹת	אֵצֶל	בָּאָרֶץ	אֶחָד	אוֹפַן	וְהִנֵּה		הַחַיּוֹת	וָאֵרֶא	15
each living creature	beside	on the earth	a	wheel [was]	and behold		the living creatures	And as I looked at	
Art | N-fp	Prep	Prep-b, Art | N-fs	Number-ms	N-ms	Conj-w | Interjection		Art | N-fp	Conj-w | V-Qal-ConsecImperf-1cs	

https://www.mechanical-translation.org/mtt/G1.html

2 and~the~LAND (וְהָאָרֶץ / *wê'ha'a'rets*) *she~did*~EXIST(V) (הָיְתָה / *hai'tah*) CONFUSION (תֹהוּ / *to'hu*) and~UNFILLED (וָבֹהוּ / *wa'vo'hu*) and~DARKNESS (וְחֹשֶׁךְ / *wê'hho'shekh*) UPON (עַל / *al*) FACE~s (פְּנֵי / *pê'ney*) DEEP.WATER (תְּהוֹם / *tê'hom*) and~WIND (וְרוּחַ / *wê'ru'ahh*) Elohiym (אֱלֹהִים / *e'lo'him*) *much*~FLUTTER(V)~*ing(fs)* (מְרַחֶפֶת / *mê'ra'hhe'phet*) UPON (עַל / *al*) FACE~s (פְּנֵי / *pê'ney*) the~WATER~s2 (הַמָּיִם / *ha'ma'yim*)

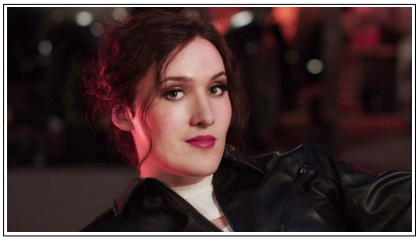
RMT: and the land had existed in confusion and was unfilled, and darkness was upon the face of the deep water and the wind of Elohiym was fluttering upon the face of the waters,

„Reasoning from the Scriptures" (publishing house of Jehovah's Witnesses):
https://www.jw.org/en/library/books/Reasoning-From-the-Scriptures/

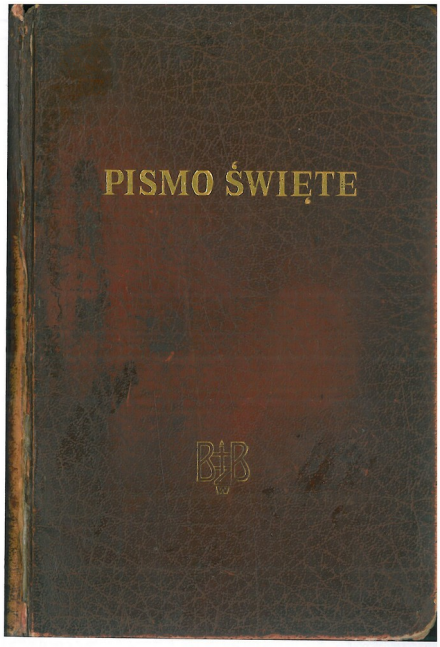


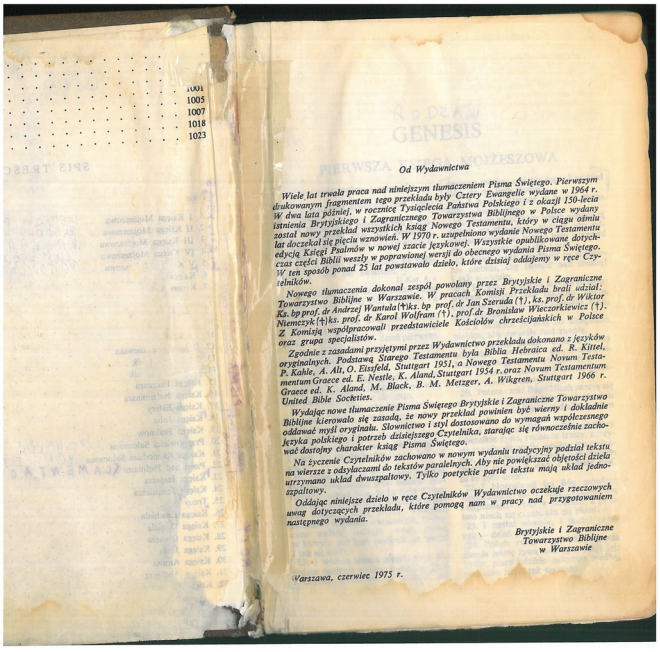
How The Economic Machine Works by Ray Dalio:
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=PHe0bXAIuk0

The History of Paper Money – Origins of Exchange
#1 https://youtu.be/-nZkP2b-4vo
#2 https://youtu.be/rPHTmGjoe2k
#3 https://youtu.be/GKtNuzakzMA
#4 https://youtu.be/lzH1p3t2oRE
#5 https://youtu.be/LrB9bS2VOLE
#6 https://youtu.be/GNo7MDN5-0g



Social Constructs | Philosophy Tube
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=koud7hgGyQ8





1001
1005
1007
1018
1023

GENESIS

Od Wydawnictwa

Wiele lat trwała praca nad niniejszym tłumaczeniem Pisma Świętego. Pierwszym drukowanym fragmentem tego przekładu były Cztery Ewangelie wydane w 1964 r. W dwa lata później, w rocznicę Tysiąclecia Państwa Polskiego i z okazji 150-lecia istnienia Brytyjskiego i Zagranicznego Towarzystwa Biblijnego w Polsce wydany został nowy przekład wszystkich ksiąg Nowego Testamentu, który w ciągu ośmiu lat doczekał się pięciu wznowień. W 1970 r. uzupełniono wydanie Nowego Testamentu edycją Księgi Psalmów w nowej szacie językowej. Wszystkie opublikowane dotychczas części Biblii weszły w poprawionej wersji do obecnego wydania Pisma Świętego. W ten sposób ponad 25 lat powstawało dzieło, które dzisiaj oddajemy w ręce Czytelników.

Nowego tłumaczenia dokonał zespół powołany przez Brytyjskie i Zagraniczne Towarzystwo Biblijne w Warszawie. W pracach Komisji Przekładu brali udział: Ks. bp prof. dr Andrzej Wantuła(†)ks. bp prof. dr Jan Szarek (†), ks. prof. dr Wiktor Niemczyk (†) ks. prof. dr Karol Wolfram (†), prof. dr Bronisław Wieczorkiewicz (†). Z Komisją współpracowali przedstawiciele Kościołów chrześcijańskich w Polsce oraz grupa specjalistów.

Zgodnie z zasadami przyjętymi przez Wydawnictwo przekładu dokonano z języków oryginalnych. Podstawą Starego Testamentu była Biblia Hebraica ed. R. Kittel, P. Kahle, A. Alt, O. Eissfeld, Stuttgart 1951, a Nowego Testamentu Novum Testamentum Graece ed. E. Nestle, K. Aland, Stuttgart 1954 r. oraz Novum Testamentum Graece ed. K. Aland, M. Black, B. M. Metzger, A. Wikgren, Stuttgart 1966 r. United Bible Societies.

Wydając nowe tłumaczenie Pisma Świętego Brytyjskie i Zagraniczne Towarzystwo Biblijne kierowało się zasadą, że nowy przekład powinien być wierny i dokładnie oddawać myśl oryginału. Słownictwo i styl dostosowano do wymagań współczesnego języka polskiego i potrzeb dzisiejszego Czytelnika, starając się równocześnie zachować dostojny charakter ksiąg Pisma Świętego.

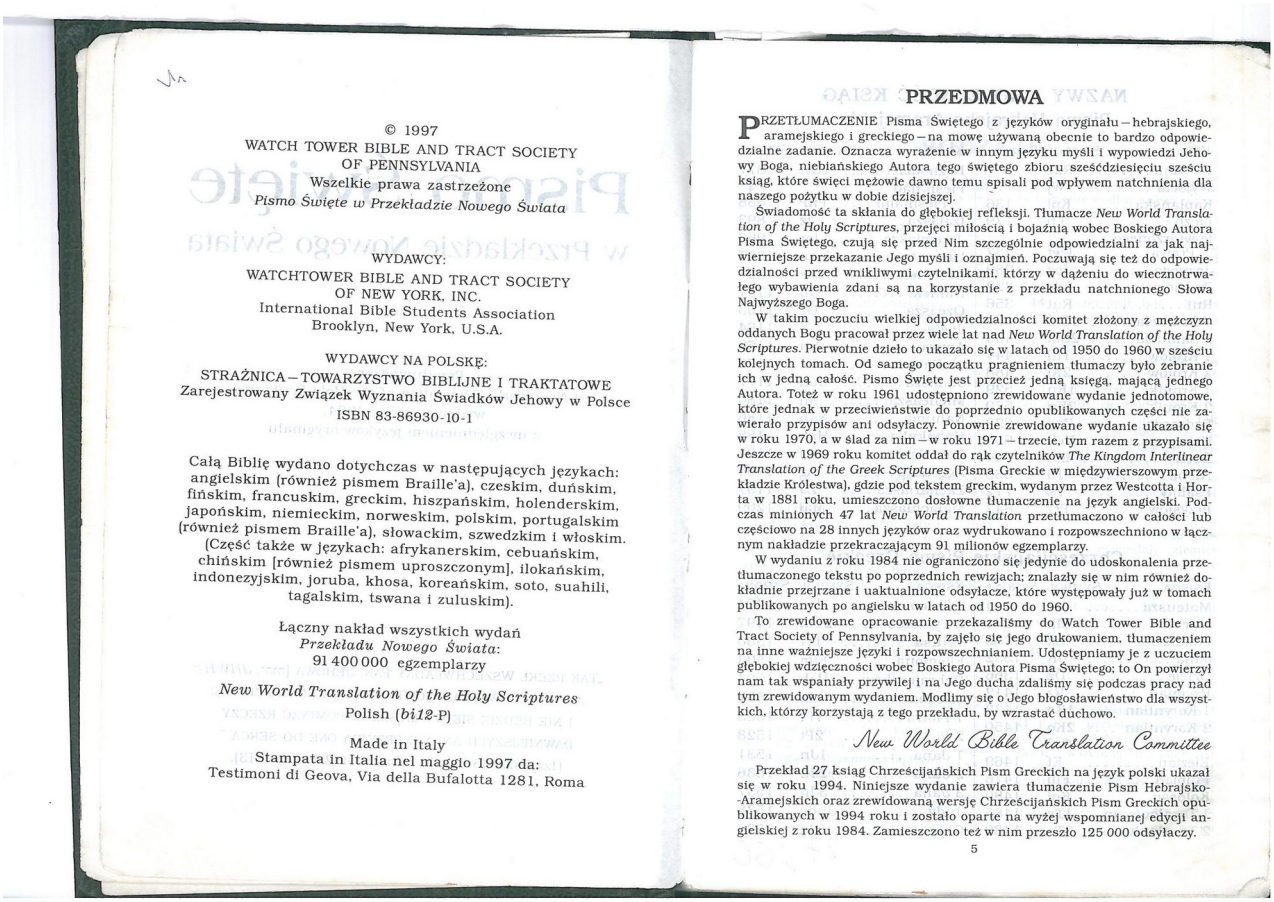
Na życzenie Czytelników zachowano w nowym wydaniu tradycyjny podział tekstu na wiersze z odsyłaczami do tekstów paralelnych. Aby nie powiększać objętości dzieła utrzymano układ dwuszpaltowy. Tylko poetyckie partie tekstu mają układ jednoszpaltowy.

Oddając niniejsze dzieło w ręce Czytelników Wydawnictwo oczekuje rzeczowych uwag dotyczących przekładu, które pomogą nam w pracy nad przygotowaniem następnego wydania.

Brytyjskie i Zagraniczne Towarzystwo Biblijne w Warszawie

Warszawa, czerwiec 1975 r.

My copy of the Holy Scriptures of the British and Foreign Bible Society in Warsaw (BiZTBwW) z 1975r.



© 1997
WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY
OF PENNSYLVANIA
Wszelkie prawa zastrzeżone
Pismo Święte w Przekładzie Nowego Świata

WYDAWCY:
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY
OF NEW YORK, INC.
International Bible Students Association
Brooklyn, New York, U.S.A.

WYDAWCY NA POLSKĘ:
STRAŻNICA – TOWARZYSTWO BIBLIJNE I TRAKTATOWE
Zarejestrowany Związek Wyznania Świadków Jehowy w Polsce
ISBN 83-86930-10-1

Całą Biblię wydano dotychczas w następujących językach: angielskim (również pismem Braille'a), czeskim, duńskim, fińskim, francuskim, greckim, hiszpańskim, holenderskim, japońskim, niemieckim, norweskim, polskim, portugalskim (również pismem Braille'a), słowackim, szwedzkim i włoskim. (Część także w językach: afrykanerskim, cebuańskim, chińskim [również pismem uproszczonym], ilokańskim, indonezyjskim, joruba, khosa, koreańskim, soto, suahili, tagalskim, tswana i zuluskim).

Łączny nakład wszystkich wydań
Przekładu Nowego Świata:
91 400 000 egzemplarzy

New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures
Polish (*bi12*-P)

Made in Italy
Stampata in Italia nel maggio 1997 da:
Testimoni di Geova, Via della Bufalotta 1281, Roma

PRZEDMOWA

PRZETŁUMACZENIE Pisma Świętego z języków oryginału – hebrajskiego, aramejskiego i greckiego – na mowę używaną obecnie to bardzo odpowiedzialne zadanie. Oznacza wyrażenie w innym języku myśli i wypowiedzi Jehowy Boga, niebiańskiego Autora tego świętego zbioru sześćdziesięciu sześciu ksiąg, które święci mężowie dawno temu spisali pod wpływem natchnienia dla naszego pożytku w dobie dzisiejszej.

Świadomość ta skłania do głębokiej refleksji. Tłumacze *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures*, przejęci miłością i bojaźnią wobec Boskiego Autora Pisma Świętego, czują się przed Nim szczególnie odpowiedzialni za jak najwierniejsze przekazanie Jego myśli i oznajmień. Poczuwają się też do odpowiedzialności przed wnikliwymi czytelnikami, którzy w dążeniu do wiecznotrwałego wybawienia zdani są na korzystanie z przekładu natchnionego Słowa Najwyższego Boga.

W takim poczuciu wielkiej odpowiedzialności komitet złożony z mężczyzn oddanych Bogu pracował przez wiele lat nad *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures*. Pierwotnie dzieło to ukazało się w latach od 1950 do 1960 w sześciu kolejnych tomach. Od samego początku pragnieniem tłumaczy było zebranie ich w jedną całość. Pismo Święte jest przecież jedną księgą, mającą jednego Autora. Toteż w roku 1961 udostępniono zrewidowane wydanie jednotomowe, które jednak w przeciwieństwie do poprzednio opublikowanych części nie zawierało przypisów ani odsyłaczy. Ponownie zrewidowane wydanie ukazało się w roku 1970, a w ślad za nim – w roku 1971 – trzecie, tym razem z przypisami. Jeszcze w 1969 roku komitet oddał do rąk czytelników *The Kingdom Interlinear Translation of the Greek Scriptures* (Pisma Greckie w międzywierszowym przekładzie Królestwa), gdzie pod tekstem greckim, wydanym przez Westcotta i Horta w 1881 roku, umieszczono dosłowne tłumaczenie na język angielski. Podczas minionych 47 lat *New World Translation* przetłumaczono w całości lub częściowo na 28 innych języków oraz wydrukowano i rozpowszechniono w łącznym nakładzie przekraczającym 91 milionów egzemplarzy.

W wydaniu z roku 1984 nie ograniczono się jedynie do udoskonalenia przetłumaczonego tekstu po poprzednich rewizjach; znalazły się w nim również dokładnie przejrzane i uaktualnione odsyłacze, które występowały już w tomach publikowanych po angielsku w latach od 1950 do 1960.

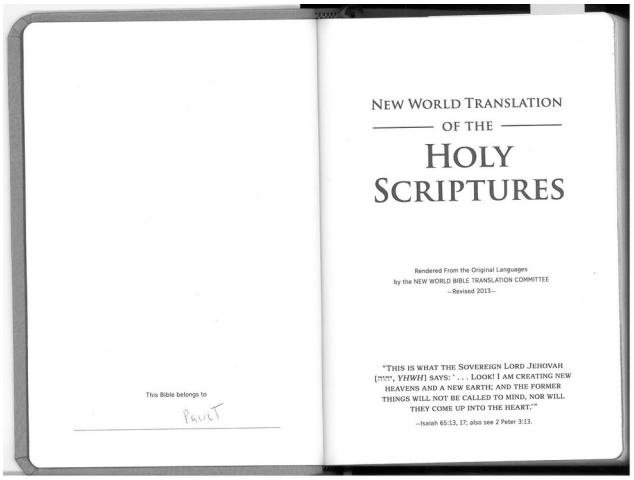
To zrewidowane opracowanie przekazaliśmy do Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of Pennsylvania, by zajęło się jego drukowaniem, tłumaczeniem na inne ważniejsze języki i rozpowszechnianiem. Udostępniamy je z uczuciem głębokiej wdzięczności wobec Boskiego Autora Pisma Świętego; to On powierzył nam tak wspaniały przywilej i na Jego ducha zdaliśmy się podczas pracy nad tym zrewidowanym wydaniem. Modlimy się o Jego błogosławieństwo dla wszystkich, którzy korzystają z tego przekładu, by wzrastać duchowo.

New World Bible Translation Committee

Przekład 27 ksiąg Chrześcijańskich Pism Greckich na język polski ukazał się w roku 1994. Niniejsze wydanie zawiera tłumaczenie Pism Hebrajsko-Aramejskich oraz zrewidowaną wersję Chrześcijańskich Pism Greckich opublikowanych w 1994 roku i zostało oparte na wyżej wspomnianej edycji angielskiej z roku 1984. Zamieszczono też w nim przeszło 125 000 odsyłaczy.

5

My copy of the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures from 1997r.

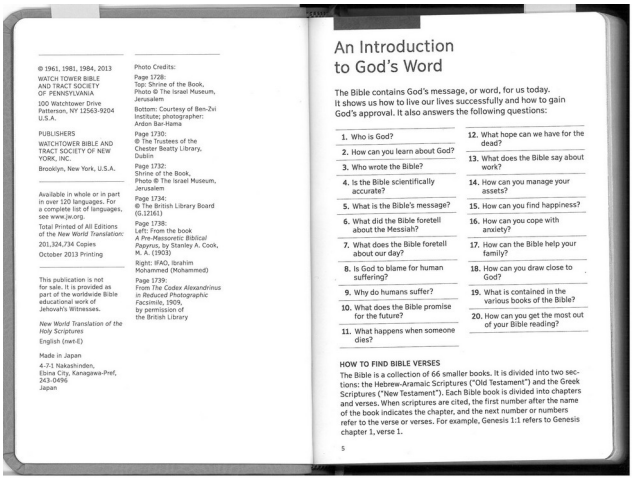


NEW WORLD TRANSLATION
OF THE
HOLY
SCRIPTURES

Rendered From the Original Languages
by the NEW WORLD BIBLE TRANSLATION COMMITTEE
—Revised 2013—

This Bible belongs to
Paul

"THIS IS WHAT THE SOVEREIGN LORD JEHOVAH [יהוה, YHWH] SAYS: '. . . LOOK! I AM CREATING NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH; AND THE FORMER THINGS WILL NOT BE CALLED TO MIND, NOR WILL THEY COME UP INTO THE HEART.'"
—Isaiah 65:13, 17; also see 2 Peter 3:13.



© 1961, 1981, 1984, 2013
WATCH TOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY OF PENNSYLVANIA
100 Watchtower Drive
Patterson, NY 12563-9204
U.S.A.

PUBLISHERS
WATCHTOWER BIBLE AND TRACT SOCIETY OF NEW YORK, INC.
Brooklyn, New York, U.S.A.

Available in whole or in part in over 120 languages. For a complete list of languages, see www.jw.org.

Total Printed of All Editions of the *New World Translation*:
201,324,734 Copies
October 2013 Printing

This publication is not for sale. It is provided as part of the worldwide Bible educational work of Jehovah's Witnesses.

New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures
English (nwt-E)

Made in Japan
4-7-1 Nakashinden,
Ebina City, Kanagawa-Pref,
243-0496
Japan

Photo Credits:
Page 1728:
Top: Shrine of the Book, Photo © The Israel Museum, Jerusalem
Bottom: Courtesy of Ben-Zvi Institute; photographer: Ardon Bar-Hama
Page 1730:
© The Trustees of the Chester Beatty Library, Dublin
Page 1732:
Shrine of the Book, Photo © The Israel Museum, Jerusalem
Page 1734:
© The British Library Board (G.12161)
Page 1738:
Left: From the book *A Pre-Massoretic Biblical Papyrus*, by Stanley A. Cook, M. A. (1903)
Right: IFAO, Ibrahim Mohammed (Mohammed)
Page 1739:
From *The Codex Alexandrinus in Reduced Photographic Facsimile*, 1909, by permission of the British Library

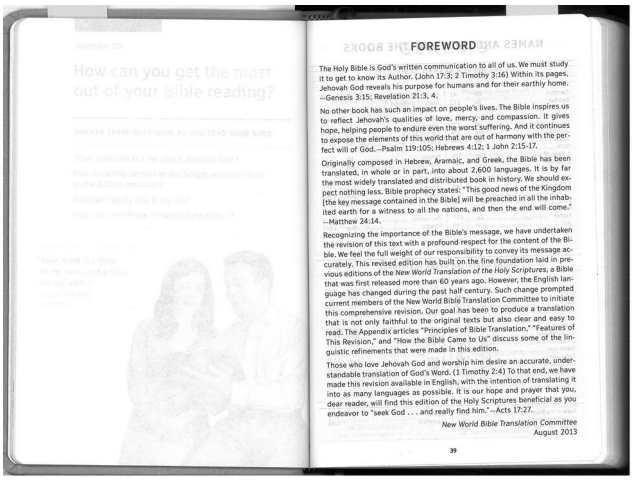
An Introduction to God's Word

The Bible contains God's message, or word, for us today. It shows us how to live our lives successfully and how to gain God's approval. It also answers the following questions:

1. Who is God?
2. How can you learn about God?
3. Who wrote the Bible?
4. Is the Bible scientifically accurate?
5. What is the Bible's message?
6. What did the Bible foretell about the Messiah?
7. What does the Bible foretell about our day?
8. Is God to blame for human suffering?
9. Why do humans suffer?
10. What does the Bible promise for the future?
11. What happens when someone dies?
12. What hope can we have for the dead?
13. What does the Bible say about work?
14. How can you manage your assets?
15. How can you find happiness?
16. How can you cope with anxiety?
17. How can the Bible help your family?
18. How can you draw close to God?
19. What is contained in the various books of the Bible?
20. How can you get the most out of your Bible reading?

HOW TO FIND BIBLE VERSES

The Bible is a collection of 66 smaller books. It is divided into two sections: the Hebrew-Aramaic Scriptures ("Old Testament") and the Greek Scriptures ("New Testament"). Each Bible book is divided into chapters and verses. When scriptures are cited, the first number after the name of the book indicates the chapter, and the next number or numbers refer to the verse or verses. For example, Genesis 1:1 refers to Genesis chapter 1, verse 1.



FOREWORD

The Holy Bible is God's written communication to all of us. We must study it to get to know its Author, (John 17:3; 2 Timothy 3:16) Within its pages, Jehovah God reveals his purpose for humans and for their earthly home. —Genesis 3:15; Revelation 21:3, 4.

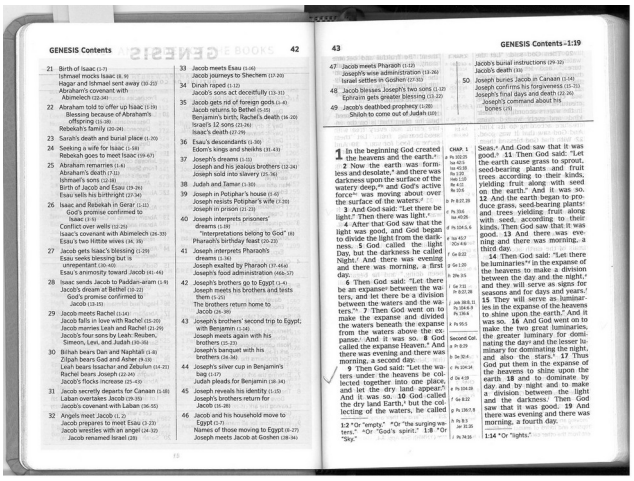
No other book has such an impact on people's lives. The Bible inspires us to reflect Jehovah's qualities of love, mercy, and compassion. It gives hope, helping people to endure even the worst suffering. And it continues to expose the elements of this world that are out of harmony with the perfect will of God.—Psalm 119:105; Hebrews 4:12; 1 John 2:15-17.

Originally composed in Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek, the Bible has been translated, in whole or in part, into about 2,600 languages. It is by far the most widely translated and distributed book in history. We should expect nothing less. Bible prophecy states: "This good news of the Kingdom [the key message contained in the Bible] will be preached in all the inhabited earth for a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come." —Matthew 24:14.

Recognizing the importance of the Bible's message, we have undertaken the revision of this text with a profound respect for the content of the Bible. We feel the full weight of our responsibility to convey its message accurately. This revised edition has built on the fine foundation laid in previous editions of the New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures, a Bible that was first released more than 60 years ago. However, the English language has changed during the past half century. Such change prompted current members of the New World Bible Translation Committee to initiate this comprehensive revision. Our goal has been to produce a translation that is not only faithful to the original texts but also clear and easy to read. The Appendix articles "Principles of Bible Translation," "Features of This Revision," and "How the Bible Came to Us" discuss some of the linguistic refinements that were made in this edition.

Those who love Jehovah God and worship him desire an accurate, understandable translation of God's Word. (1 Timothy 2:4) To that end, we have made this revision available in English, with the intention of translating it into as many languages as possible. It is our hope and prayer that you, dear reader, will find this edition of the Holy Scriptures beneficial as you endeavor to "seek God . . . and really find him."—Acts 17:27.

New World Bible Translation Committee
August 2013



GENESIS Contents 42

21 Birth of Isaac (1-7)
Ishmael mocks Isaac (8, 9)
Hagar and Ishmael sent away (10-21)
Abraham's covenant with Abimelech (22-34)
22 Abraham told to offer up Isaac (1-19)
Blessing because of Abraham's offspring (15-18)
Nahor's family (20-24)
23 Sarah's death and burial place (1-20)
24 Seeking a wife for Isaac (1-58)
Rebekah goes to meet Isaac (59-67)
25 Abraham remarries (1-6)
Abraham's death (7-11)
Ishmael's sons (12-18)
Birth of Jacob and Esau (19-26)
Esau sells his birthright (27-34)
26 Isaac and Rebekah in Gerar (1-11)
God's promise confirmed to Isaac (1-5)
Conflict over wells (12-25)
Isaac's covenant with Abimelech (26-33)
Esau's two Hittite wives (34, 35)
27 Jacob gets Isaac's blessing (1-29)
Esau seeks blessing but is unrepentant (30-40)
Esau's animosity toward Jacob (41-45)
28 Isaac sends Jacob to Paddan-aram (1-9)
Jacob's dream at Bethel (10-22)
God's promise confirmed to Jacob (13-15)
29 Jacob meets Rachel (1-14)
Jacob falls in love with Rachel (15-20)
Jacob marries Leah and Rachel (21-29)
Jacob's four sons by Leah: Reuben, Simeon, Levi, and Judah (31-35)
30 Bilhah bears Dan and Naphtali (1-8)
Zilpah bears Gad and Asher (9-13)
Leah bears Issachar and Zebulun (14-21)
Rachel bears Joseph (22-24)
Jacob's flocks increase (25-43)
31 Jacob secretly departs for Canaan (1-18)
Laban overtakes Jacob (19-35)
Jacob's covenant with Laban (36-55)
32 Angels meet Jacob (1, 2)
Jacob prepares to meet Esau (3-23)
Jacob wrestles with an angel (24-32)
Jacob renamed Israel (28)
33 Jacob meets Esau (1-16)
Jacob journeys to Shechem (17-20)
34 Dinah raped (1-12)
Jacob's sons act deceitfully (13-31)
35 Jacob gets rid of foreign gods (1-4)
Jacob returns to Bethel (5-15)
Benjamin's birth; Rachel's death (16-20)
Israel's 12 sons (21-26)
Isaac's death (27-29)
36 Esau's descendants (1-30)
Edom's kings and sheikhs (31-43)
37 Joseph's dreams (1-11)
Joseph and his jealous brothers (12-24)
Joseph sold into slavery (25, 36)
38 Judah and Tamar (1-30)
39 Joseph in Potiphar's house (1-6)
Joseph resists Potiphar's wife (7-20)
Joseph in prison (21-23)
40 Joseph interprets prisoners' dreams (1-19)
"Interpretations belong to God" (8)
Pharaoh's birthday feast (20-22)
41 Joseph interprets Pharaoh's dreams (1-36)
Joseph exalted by Pharaoh (37-44a)
Joseph's food administration (44b-57)
42 Joseph's brothers go to Egypt (1-4)
Joseph meets his brothers and tests them (5-25)
The brothers return home to Jacob (26-38)
43 Joseph's brothers' second trip to Egypt; with Benjamin (1-14)
Joseph meets again with his brothers (15-23)
Joseph's banquet with his brothers (24, 34)
44 Joseph's silver cup in Benjamin's bag (1-17)
Judah pleads for Benjamin (18-34)
45 Joseph reveals his identity (1-15)
Joseph's brothers return for Jacob (16-28)
46 Jacob and his household move to Egypt (1-7)
Names of those moving to Egypt (8-27)
Joseph meets Jacob at Goshen (28-34)

47 Jacob meets Pharaoh (1-12)
Joseph's wise administration (13-26)
Israel settles in Goshen (27-31)
48 Jacob blesses Joseph's two sons (1-12)
Ephraim gets greater blessing (13-22)
49 Jacob's deathbed prophecy (1-28)
Shiloh to come out of Judah (10b)
Jacob's burial instructions (29-32)
Jacob's death (33)
50 Joseph buries Jacob in Canaan (1-14)
Joseph confirms his forgiveness (15-21)
Joseph's final days and death (22-26)
Joseph's command about his bones (25)

CHAP. 1

1 In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.ᵃ
2 Now the earth was formless and desolate,ᵇ and there was darkness upon the surface of the watery deep,ᶜ[ᵈ] and God's active forceᵉ[ᵉ] was moving about over the surface of the waters.ᶠ
3 And God said: "Let there be light." Then there was light.ᵍ
4 After that God saw that the light was good, and God began to divide the light from the darkness. **5** God called the light Day, but the darkness he called Night.ʰ And there was evening and there was morning, a first day.
6 Then God said: "Let there be an expanseⁱ between the waters, and let there be a division between the waters and the waters."ʲ **7** Then God went on to make the expanse and divided the waters beneath the expanse from the waters above the expanse.ᵏ And it was so. **8** God called the expanse Heaven.ˡ And there was evening and there was morning, a second day.
9 Then God said: "Let the waters under the heavens be collected together into one place, and let the dry land appear." And it was so. **10** God called the dry land Earth,ᵐ but the collecting of the waters, he called

1:2 *Or "empty." *Or "the surging waters." *Or "God's spirit." 1:8 *Or "Sky."

Seas.ⁿ And God saw that it was good.ᵒ **11** Then God said: "Let the earth cause grass to sprout, seed-bearing plants and fruit seed-bearing trees according to their kinds, yielding fruit along with seed on the earth." And it was so. **12** And the earth began to produce grass, seed-bearing plants according to their kinds, and trees yielding fruit along with seed, according to their kinds. Then God saw that it was good. **13** And there was evening and there was morning, a third day.
14 Then God said: "Let there be luminaries*ᵖ in the expanse of the heavens to make a division between the day and the night," and they will serve as signs for seasons and for days and years.' **15** They will serve as luminaries in the expanse of the heavens to shine upon the earth." And it was so. **16** And God went on to make the two great luminaries, the greater luminary for dominating the day, and the lesser luminary for dominating the night, and also the stars.ᵠ **17** Then God put them in the expanse of the heavens to shine upon the earth **18** and to dominate by day and by night and to make a division between the light and the darkness. Then God saw that it was good. **19** And there was evening and there was morning, a fourth day.

1:14 *Or "lights."

NEW WORLD TRANSLATIONS OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES (Revised 2013)

Project-www page
https://sites.google.com/view/green-white-orange/project-eng
Project-YouTube
https://www.youtube.com/playlist?list=PLvS8aNdLJMv02rDSg-kRpNnqZjNu422F1
Project-Google Disk
https://drive.google.com/drive/folders/1LCl1cXtmapNtxgASSlj3ullPFYdeeoGK?usp=sharing
INTERNET ARCHIVE
https://archive.org/details/@pawelkova
https://www.reddit.com/user/Pawelkova
Project-DeviantArt
https://www.deviantart.com/pawelkova/gallery/74036885/project
Project-Imgur
https://imgur.com/user/Pawelkova/favorites/folder/12283813/project
MAIL:
Pawelkova.Project@gmail.com